

# *The Bravest Man in Lee's Army*

*[The Martin Boys the Pride of Old Fauquier?]*

A Family History of

Robert Edward Martin

and his brothers Josh and Dick

all members of Fauquier County's Famous Black Horse  
Cavalry, Company H, Fourth Virginia Cavalry, C. S. A.



ROBERT MARTIN.

By an English Nobleman presented with  
rifle as the bravest man in the  
Confederate Army.

Sons of "Honest" John Martin and his Wife Susan A. Fisher  
and Descended from the Immigrant, John Joseph Martin  
of Germantown, Fauquier County, Virginia  
with Additional Notes on the  
Bowen, Childs, Ficklin, Fisher, Mountjoy and Shumate Families

By

**Lynn Hopewell**

About 282 pages; 55,100 words: file: D:\Blackhorse Cavalry\Martin Boys Book\Bravest Man Manuscript\The Bravest Man  
in Lee's Army-Revised May-2002- double spaced.doc

*THE BRAVEST MAN IN LEE'S ARMY.* Copyright ©2002 by Lynn Hopewell. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles and reviews. For information, address Lynn Hopewell, 82 Erin Drive, Warrenton, Virginia 20186-2829.

Cover and Interior Design and Production: Pneuma Books:

[www.pneumadesign.com/books.info.htm](http://www.pneumadesign.com/books.info.htm)

Typeface: Century Schoolbook

Paper: ..... Acid Free.

**LIMITED FIRST EDITION of 200 copies.**

First Printing.

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication data

Hopewell, Harry Lynn Jr., 1937-

The Bravest Man in Lee's Army. Civil War, Fauquier County, Virginia, Martin Family.

Bibliography: p. Includes index.

E\_\_\_\_\_ 2002 \_\_\_\_\_, 7-\_\_\_\_\_.

ISBN #####

Published by , \_\_\_\_\_ , Warrenton, Virginia

Credit: The photograph of Robert Edward Martin on the front cover is from *Women of the Debatable Land*, by Alexander Hunter. (Corden Publishing Company: Washington, D. C., 1912).

This book has been placed in the following depositories:

- The Fauquier County Public Library, Warrenton, Virginia
- Fauquier High School, Warrenton, Virginia
- The Library of Virginia, Richmond, Virginia
- The Library of Congress, Washington, D.C.
- The Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah
- The National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, Washington, D.C.
- The Sons of Confederate Veterans, Columbia, Tennessee
- Civil War Institute, Gettysburg College, Gettysburg,
- Callaway County Public Library, Fulton, Missouri
- Oklahoma Historical Society, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma
- The Memorial Foundation of The Germanna Colonies, Inc. Germanna, Virginia
- The Fauquier Heritage Society, Marshall, Virginia
- Liberty High School, Bealeton, Virginia
- The Portsmouth, Virginia Public Library
- The Virginia Historical Society, Richmond, Virginia
- The National Genealogical Society Arlington, Virginia
- The United Daughters of the Confederacy, Richmond, Virginia
- Museum of the Confederacy, Richmond, Virginia
- Virginia Center for Civil War Studies, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, Blacksburg, Virginia
- The U. S. Army Military History Institute, Carlisle, Pennsylvania
- Missouri Historical Society, St. Louis, Missouri
- Owasso, Oklahoma Public Library, Owasso, Oklahoma

Dedication

To

**Frank Dudley Lawrence, Jr.**

of

Portsmouth, Virginia

Husband of Charlotte, father of Carolyn, Frank, Margaret and David,

and

grandfather of my Harry and Mathew,

who first introduced me to the War Between the States.

A true Virginian, and one of the finest men I have ever known

## *“The Martin Boys- The Pride of Old Fauquier”*

...a Trio of Brothers, whose devotion to the Southern Cause, and true courage as Soldiers, if equaled, could not be excelled, as was attested by the confidence reposed in them by their officers, the admiration and esteem of their comrades, and the dread and respect of their armed foes, for it could be truly said of them, that where duty called they were prompt to obey, and in the midst of conflict where the steel flashed brightest, and the bullets flew thickest, there were the Martin boys to be found.

Author unknown, from Dick Martin's obituary

### **Bob Martin**

He appeared to court danger for itself, and it seemed there was nothing he so little valued as life. To him, by general consent, therefore, the rifle was awarded as “the bravest of the brave.”

John Scott, first Captain of the Black Horse Cavalry

### **Dick Martin**

Dick Martin ...was second to none in the Black Horse for courage and nerve. It was he who had the proud distinction of being chosen by Jackson at Harper's Ferry to carry to the Lee the tidings of its surrender. It was he whom Lee chose to bear his dispatches to Jackson, urging him to effect a junction at Sharpsburg....

Alexander Hunter, member of the Black Horse Cavalry  
and author, *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*

### **Josh Martin**

I have seen him in the advance dismounted, his eyes blazing with the flame of battle, and his voice rising above the rattling fire of carbines, cheering his comrades on; and I have seen him stop, and with a pitying tenderness give his canteen to a wounded enemy lying in his path....

Alexander Hunter

# Contents

Dedication .....	iv
Photographs .....	xi
Maps and Illustrations .....	xiii
Acknowledgements.....	xiv
Forward .....	xvii
Preface .....	xviii
1 Introduction.....	22
The Brothers .....	24
Fauquier County Prepares for War .....	25
The Black Horse Cavalry .....	26
2 From Germany to Germantown.....	32
The Immigrant: John Joseph Martin .....	33
The First Colony at Germanna .....	33
Germantown, Fauquier County, Virginia .....	34
What Kind of People Were They?.....	39
The Colony Disperses.....	41
The Germantown Settlement Boundaries.....	43
3 The Family of Elias Martin.....	47
Fauquier County in the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Century .....	47
John Joseph Martin and His Wife Eve .....	48
Tilman and Elizabeth Martin.....	48

*Table of Contents*

	Elias Martin .....	49
4	The Family of Honest John Martin .....	58
	The Children of John and Susan.....	62
	The 1850 Census.....	64
	Honest John Martin During the War .....	65
	After the War .....	67
	The Martin Farms.....	69
	The Martin Family Cemetery.....	73
5	Robert Edward “Bob” Martin .....	76
	His Accidental Death .....	76
	His Marriage to Mary Childs.....	78
	His Black Horse Service.....	79
	Mary Virginia Childs Martin, his Wife.....	88
	Why Is Bob Martin Unknown Today? .....	90
6	Margaret Ann Martin .....	91
	James H. Childs.....	92
	The Early Death of Mother and Children .....	93
7	Mildred Lee “Minnie” Martin .....	99
	Her Love Affair with William H. Childs.....	99
8	Susan Elizabeth “Bettie” Martin.....	105
	Her Husband William A. Bowen, Jr. ....	106
	Bettie During the War .....	107
	Billy Bowen During the War .....	108
	Betties’ Death .....	109

*Table of Contents*

	Their Son Malcom Martin Bowen .....	110
	Malcom Martin Bowen's Children .....	111
9	John Richard "Dick" Martin.....	114
	Dick Martin's Black Horse Service .....	114
	His Move to Missouri .....	118
	Dick's Marriage to Jemima Gilmore .....	119
	Dick's Marriage to Mary Gregory .....	135
	Recognition of His Teaching Career .....	144
	Dick's Pension Application .....	145
	The Last Years.....	147
10	George Washington "Josh" Martin.....	152
	The Lt. John Meigs Affair.....	153
11	Epilogue .....	165
	A Family Fades.....	165
	Three left children.....	165
	History Dimmed .....	166
<b>Appendix 1</b>	<b>The Bowen Family.....</b>	<b>167</b>
	James M. Bowen.....	167
	James Marshall Bowen [Jr.].....	168
	Thomas Conrad Bowen .....	169
	Peter B. Bowen .....	170
	William A. Bowen .....	171
<b>Appendix 2</b>	<b>The Childs Family .....</b>	<b>177</b>
	William H. Childs .....	177

*Table of Contents*

Francis A. Childs .....	181
<b>Appendix 3     The Ficklin Family .....</b>	<b>187</b>
William and Sarah Ficklin .....	188
Anthony Ficklin Son of William and Sarah .....	189
Lewis Ficklin Son of Anthony.....	190
Lewis and Simpah's Son Gustavus.....	192
Lewis and Simpah's Son William Phillips Ficklin .....	193
<b>Appendix 4     The Fisher Family .....</b>	<b>206</b>
Richard Fisher .....	206
William Thomas Fisher.....	206
His Children.....	209
William Thomas Fisher Estate .....	212
John Gordon.....	212
<b>Appendix 5     The Mountjoy Family .....</b>	<b>215</b>
Edward Mountjoy .....	215
<b>Appendix 6     The Shumate Family .....</b>	<b>222</b>
The Shumate Immigrant Jean de la Chaumette .....	222
Daniel Shumate .....	223
Lewis Shumate .....	230
His Home.....	231
Lewis Shumate, Jr. and his Wife Mildred Waggoner Martin.....	237
<b>Appendix 7     Martin Family Germantown Land Transactions .....</b>	<b>244</b>
About the Author.....	252
Bibliography.....	255

*Table of Contents*

Martin Deeds Analysis ..... 270

Martin Wills Analysis..... 273

Honest John Martin Family's Vital Statistics ..... 274

Elias Beverly Martin ..... 276

Research Notes..... 279

# Photographs

Heit House at Germantown

Old grave at Germantown

The old Weaver House at Germantown

John Martin Home Farm Residence

Robert Martin in Uniform

Robert Martin in Mufti

Margaret Childs Martin

Ernest Lee Childs

Ernest Lee Childs, Jr.

Childs

Mildred Lee Martin

Susan Elizabeth Martin Bowen

Malcom Bowen

Arnold Helm

John Richard Martin in uniform

Charles O. Kinney and his wife Jemima Gilmore

Bettie Bowen Martin and her sister Lucy about

Bettie Bowen Martin, age about 19

Lucy Ann Martin, age about 21

Daniel DeWitt Smith, Jr., son of Lucy Martin Smith

Nadine Loretta Smith (daughter of DeWitt Smith) and husband Albert Scott

DeWitt Smith, his daughter Nadine, his mother Lucy and his grandmother

Jemima

Mamie Martin, John Richard Martin's third daughter, as a young woman

Aileen Lynn Burge Wright, John Richard Martin's granddaughter

John Richard Martin in his later years

George Washington Martin in uniform

Grave of George Washington Martin

## Maps and Illustrations

Location map of Germantown settlement, Fauquier County

Elias Martin and Mary Mountjoy marriage bond, 1791

1850 U. S. Census of John Martin Family, Fauquier County, Virginia

Survey of John Martin Home Farm

Survey of John Martin Licking Run Farm

Location of Martin Cemetery, Germantown

## Acknowledgements

A book like this would not be possible without tapping the minds and experience of many others who are interested in the history of Fauquier County, Virginia and of its famous Black Horse Cavalry.

Many people have given generously of their time and resources to assist me in preparing this book on the Martin family. I would like to acknowledge as many of them as I can remember. Because I collected the information over many years, I hope I have not made a serious omission. In alphabetical order:

-The late Charles H. Bowen, Jr., and his brother, the late Russell C. Bowen, and Ray Gill for sharing Bowen family information.

-Scott Carter for his interest, numerous assistances and for accompanying me on several field expeditions looking for cemeteries and grave markers.

-Alice Jane Childs for helping sort out the Childs family of Casanova.

-John Gott, for patiently mining his treasure trove of Fauquier County newspaper clippings and for guiding the author through the resources of the Fauquier Heritage Society.

-Alexander Hunter, a Black Horse Cavalryman who left us wonderful books filled with tales of the Black Horse and marvelous descriptions of the Martin boys, their adventures and their family.

-Tom Jenkins and Cathy Delph, for providing the 1898 photo of the residence of Honest John Martin..

### *Acknowledgements*

-Mort Künstler, for his artistic talent, his interest in the Black Horse and for featuring them in his painting “Bravest of the Brave, Black Horse Cavalry in Warrenton, Virginia, February 22, 1863”. The only identified person in the painting was Bob Martin.

-Jackie Lee, for assistance accessing the resources of the Fauquier Historical Society.

-Elizabeth “Bizz” Lineweaver for sharing the resources of Fauquier’s Black Horse Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy.

-The late Dave Magnum, antique maven, for his help in acquiring Martin family photographs.

-Bill Martin, author and genealogist of the early Martin family, for generous responses to my queries about Honest John Martin’s ancestors..

-Don Pretchtel, for painting “Native Sons: The Black Horse Cavalry,” depicting five Black Horsemen including Josh and Bob Martin.

-Ripley Robinson, descendant of a Black Horseman, and reenactor extraordinaire, for his interest in and work on preserving the Martin Family Cemetery.

-Phyllis Scott and Wilma Bender, deputy clerks of the Fauquier County Court, for patiently assisting me in navigating various court records.

-Nathaniel DeWitt Smith, Jr. of Siloam Springs, Arkansas, and Aileen Lynn Burge Wright, of Jacksonville, Illinois, Dick Martin’s grandchildren, who provided so much helpful information on his family.

-Don Tharpe, for sharing photographs of Bob and Dick Martin.

*Acknowledgements*

Also to:

-The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints for their Herculean efforts to support genealogy and for sharing their records over their free Family Search web site.

- Finally to my wife Leslie whose English and editing skills have always improved my writing.

Thanks to all.

# Forward

'To be done. Possible authors:

John Gott, Fauquier Heritage Society

E. Lee Shepard, Virginia Historical Society

Bob Krick, Fredericksburg & Spotsylvania National Battlefield Park

Bud Robertson, Virginia Tech

## Preface

I have been researching Fauquier's Black Horse Cavalry—Company H, Fourth Virginia Cavalry, C. S. A.—for many years. The objective of the work is a comprehensive history of this famous Confederate Cavalry company. My focus is not just on the military history of the unit. Frankly, I find the individual cavalrymen and their families just as interesting.

After researching over 220 members of the company, I become very aware that the men came from the best families and that there was a high degree of social and kinship interaction between them. The members of the company knew each other and each other's families.

One family stood out in my studies—the Martins. "Honest" John Martin and his wife Susan Fisher Martin had three sons in the Black Horse and two of their daughters married Black Horse Cavalrymen.

Other families also had several sons in the Black Horse—this was quite common. However, this family attracted my attention because the three Martin boys were especially noted for their daring exploits.

Even before the War Between the States, the Martin family was prominent in Fauquier County. John Martin descended from an original settler of the Germantown colony of Fauquier, John Joseph Martin.

Attention on the family intensified during the war. Their oldest son Bob was the subject of a remarkable event. He was selected as the "bravest man in Lee's army"

and awarded a rifle sent by an Englishman for that purpose. This was an extraordinary honor, and, you would think, would be a well remembered and celebrated part of Fauquier's history.

Yet, at the beginning of the 21st century, Bob Martin and his family are all but forgotten. No descendant with the name Martin remains. The graves of the family are overgrown and ignored in a country cemetery.

I have no illusions that this book will have broad appeal, not even to civil war enthusiasts. It will not. It is the most local of local history. My goal is simple. I hope this work will document this noted family and their brave sons—especially the “bravest man in Lee's army”—and help them become a remembered and honored part of Fauquier's heritage.

Not only is the Martin family fascinating in general, so is their kinship with other notable Fauquier families. Thus, I have included what I could find on their allied families—those of the spouses of the siblings and children of Honest John Martin. To make this a manageable project, I did not apply this scheme above Honest John Martin's generation or below his children's. However, I have provided as many references as I could to these families.

A word about research methods and sources. Where possible, especially in Fauquier County, I have used many primary sources such as deeds, wills and marriages. However, I found that to tell the story of the Martin boys, and particularly their allied families, I had to use information prepared by others. The reader is cautioned that these secondary resources vary considerably in quality.

Some cite primary sources for the information presented. Some do not. For the professional genealogist, these secondary sources are just a place to start. They should not be taken as absolute gospel.

The Internet poses a particular challenge. A web page is not a book in a library—they come and go. Although I cite the sources of my Internet derived information, do not be surprised if it no longer exists if you look for one of them.

A work such as this is always incomplete and further research on the Martin and allied families (and the Black Horse Cavalry) continues. A revised edition of this work or an addendum is always possible if enough new information is uncovered. Anyone with corrections or additional information (letters, diaries, and photographs are especially desired) on the genealogical history of these families (or their family members who were in the Black Horse) is kindly requested to communicate with the author at:

82 Erin Drive,

Warrenton, Virginia 20186-2829.

Telephone: 540-349-2488, voice and fax.

Email: [lynn@hopewell.org](mailto:lynn@hopewell.org)

Lynn Hopewell

Warrenton, Virginia

May 26, 2002

---

# The Bravest Man in Lee's Army

---

By

Lynn Hopewell



# 1

## Introduction

In the last half of the nineteenth century, the War between the States dramatically shaped the history and social milieu of Fauquier County, Virginia. Almost every able bodied male in Fauquier, thousands of men, served in the Confederate army. Hundreds died, and many more were wounded. The armies of both sides spent many months in the county and economically devastated it. The impact on Fauquier families was profound.

This book tells the story of one of those families, and their three sons; the “Bravest Man in Lee’s Army—Robert Edward Martin, and his brothers Dick and Josh. According to the inscription on Josh’s tombstone, they were—“The Martin Boys the Pride of Old Fauquier.” These sons of “Honest” John Martin and Susan Fisher became local heroes because of their bravery and adventures in Fauquier's famous Black Horse Cavalry.<sup>1 2 3 4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The Black Horse Cavalry was Company H, 4th Virginia Cavalry, Gen. J. E. B. Stuart’s Corps, Army of Northern Virginia, C.S.A., and became famous as escorts and scouts for Generals Robert E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson and Stuart.

The Martins were a prominent nineteenth century Fauquier County, Virginia family, descendents of German immigrants who settled Fauquier's noted Germantown community. In succeeding chapters we will look at the arrival of Martins in Fauquier, focusing first on Elias Martin, grandfather of the Martin boys and his forebears. Then we will look at the family of Honest John and their children in detail; as well as their families allied by marriage.

But, first we give an overview of the Martin brothers and the Black Horse Cavalry. Who were these young men? What were their daring deeds? What was their family like? Who were their kin? The tale is scattered among books, articles, magazines, photo albums, cemeteries, manuscripts, letters, interviews and court records in a number of states.

When it is all pulled together, the picture emerges of a family with everything to lose who gave their all to their community during turbulent times.

---

<sup>2</sup> Lynn Hopewell, "Cavaliers and Lawyers Formed The Famous Black Horse Cavalry," *Fauquier Magazine*, volume 5, number 12 (Winter 1992-93): 25-27.

<sup>3</sup> Katherine Isham Keith, "The Record of the Black Horse Troop," *Fauquier Historical Society Bulletin*, volume 1, number 4 (June 1923): 426-460. The author was the daughter of Black Horseman Isham Keith.

<sup>4</sup> Colonel John Scott, "The Black Horse Cavalry," *The Annals of the War* (Philadelphia: The Times Publishing Company, 1879): 590-613. Col. Scott was the first captain of the Black Horse. This is the only history of the Black Horse written by a member of the company.

## **The Brothers**

Bob, Dick and Josh Martin fought from the beginning of the war to the end with the Black Horse and all were involved in noted exploits. Each of the brothers gave distinguished service.

Bob Martin won a rifle for being the “bravest man in Lee’s Army.”<sup>5</sup>

Dick Martin was known for his skill and daring as a “scout.”

Josh Martin was involved in a famous incident, in which Lt. John Meigs, an engineer on General Philip Sheridan’s staff, and son of Union General Montgomery Meigs, was killed.

We will tell the tale of each of the brothers in some detail. However, their supportive family also did their part. During the war, the Martin home was a rendezvous for meetings of members of the Black Horse and became a well-known



Warrenton, Virginia in front of the Courthouse, looking east, 1862

---

<sup>5</sup> Lynn Hopewell, “The Bravest Man In Lee’s Army,” *Fauquier Magazine*, volume 1, number 8 (June 1988): 16-22.

landmark. The brothers became legends in Fauquier. The Black Horse company was organized as a fighting unit several years before the war began.

### ***Fauquier County Prepares for War***

Fauquier County had a rich heritage of distinguished political figures and public servants. With the increasing sectional animosity of the 1850s—fueled by years of political and social strife—Fauquier had become a hotbed of political discussion and activity.

Robert Eden Scott, the region's Representative in the U. S. Congress was from Fauquier. The Fauquier Bar had become a forum of disunionist sentiment. From it would come the organizers of the Black Horse. The company was thus lead by attorneys with strong family and social ties. In national political developments by the late 1850s, the Northern and Southern sections of the U.S. had evolved into two distinct regions, even civilizations. The compromises of many decades that had maintained political balance and tentative union had lost their force.

Tariffs, national banking and internal improvements were examples of issues on which the South had been willing to compromise to maintain the integrity of the constitutional union of sovereign states. However, the growing industrialization of the North, compounded by increasing numbers of immigrants contrasted with a stable Southern society based upon agriculture, had driven the sections apart.

The differences, exacerbated by Northern abolitionists, and arising from the pantheistic Transcendentalist movement of New England, unleashed a relentless

attack upon not only the “peculiar institution” of slavery, but upon all things Southern.

Proposing “solutions” to problems with which they in the North did not have to deal, the abolitionists provided the catalyst that forced the South to define itself as the sole heir—and defender—of the original U.S. Constitution. Southern patience began to wear thin of Northern ridicule. The sentiment for secession—long threatened throughout the Southland and earlier intimated over other issues by such Northern states as Massachusetts—became widespread.

According to John Scott, the members of the Black Horse were “all young gentlemen of the first respectability, and were either themselves planters or sons of planters. The rank and file were composed of young men of the same social material with the officers.”

If not related by blood, all men in the Black Horse were friends and neighbors. The fabric of their lives was woven into an organic relationship with their community. The defense of their community against invasion from the North and defense of the Constitutional principles inherited from their Revolutionary fathers was their first thought and their essential devotion.

### ***The Black Horse Cavalry***

The Black Horse Cavalry began as militia unit, in anticipation of the coming conflict. “... [The Black Horse was] set in line by Captain D. H. Jones, afterward a Confederate general, at Waterloo, on the Rappahannock river, on the 18th of June,

1859.”<sup>6</sup> “The young men who formed this company were, as a rule, the sons of planters who would inherit land and follow the occupation of their forefathers.”<sup>7</sup>

They were most prominent before the war when they were detailed to serve as prison guards for the John Brown trial in Harper’s Ferry in 1859. After they returned home from that duty, the ladies of Fauquier entertained them at a ball.<sup>8</sup> When Virginia seceded from the Union, the company was then called into regular service.

“The Company constituted a part of the force of Virginia Volunteers and were called into the service of the State by the Governor under an ordinance of the State Convention adopted April 17, 1861, and were to serve for the term of one year from April 25, 1861 unless sooner discharged. The Company was enrolled for active service by Lt. [Robert] Randolph on May 7, 1861, at Warrenton and was mustered into service by Col. Eppa Hunton.”<sup>9</sup>

Over 230 men served with the company during the war, almost all of them from Fauquier. Thirty-five died in service and more were wounded.<sup>10</sup>

---

<sup>6</sup> Scott, “The Black Horse Cavalry,” 590. Scott correctly states that the date was the anniversary of the Battle of Waterloo.

<sup>7</sup> Keith, “The Record of the Black Horse Troop,” 434-460.

<sup>8</sup> Scott, “The Black Horse Cavalry,” 590. The author has long sought the location of the ball to no avail. The best guess is either the Warren Green Hotel or the Fauquier Springs resort.

<sup>9</sup> Rainey, Emily G. and John K. Gott, *The Years of Anguish, Fauquier County, Virginia, 1861-1865* (Warrenton, Virginia: Fauquier County Civil War Centennial Committee, 1965), iv.

<sup>10</sup> Lynn Hopewell, *The Bravest of the Brave: a History of the Black Horse Cavalry*, in preparation.

### *Their Early Fame*

The Black Horse Cavalry was arguably the most famous Confederate cavalry unit. They obtained their fame not because they were “better” than other units, but because the vagaries of war brought them into the limelight.

They got some highly visible publicity when they helped precipitate the Union rout and retreat over Cub Run Bridge at the battle of First Manassas (1861). The Northern newspapers told of the “terrible Black Horse” who boldly charged and routed the Union troops. According to the Richmond Daily Inquirer, quoting the Baltimore Exchange: <sup>11</sup>

MORE ABOUT THE TERRIBLE BLACK HORSE. Alexandria, July 25, 1861. I overheard one of the men sitting on the door step of the house describing the charge of the Black Horse Cavalry, part of which, I believe, is Capt. Scott's Fauquier cavalry. He said they advanced in a wedge form, then opened, disclosing a battery which fired upon his regiment, and that then the cavalry charged upon the regiment, hemming it in on all sides; and, cutting right and left with tremendous blows, each blow powerful enough to take off a man's head. he said he never wished to see such a charge again.

They continued to have high visibility because much of the time the enemy forces were based in Fauquier County and the Black Horse, being so familiar with the

---

<sup>11</sup> [Try to find citation from newspaper.](#)

area, were detailed as scouts and for intelligence missions. General Robert E. Lee came to rely on them and complimented the Black Horse:

The general commanding announces to the army the series of successes of the cavalry...during the winter months, in spite of the obstacles of almost impassable roads, limited forage, swollen streams and inclement weather...Captain Randolph, of the Black Horse Cavalry, has made many bold reconnaissances in Fauquier, taking more than 200 prisoners and several hundred stand of arms...

R. E. LEE,

General.<sup>12</sup>

Their reputation also advanced because of their fortuitous association with several general officers, most notably, Gen. Stonewall Jackson.

The Black horse were assigned as scouts and bodyguards to Stonewall Jackson as he began his campaign against Pope that lead to the battle of Second Manassas. On the way to Manassas, thirty men of the Black Horse, under Lt. Alexander Dixon Payne, turned back and guided Lee and Longstreet to Jackson. Several Black Horse Cavalrymen were killed in that battle.

After Second Manassas, Lee undertook his Maryland campaign. The company was the sole cavalry with General Stonewall Jackson when he took Harpers Ferry on the way to Antetiam. Jackson specifically commended them in his battle report.

---

<sup>12</sup> Gen Order #29, Hqs. Army of N. Va. February 28, 1863. *The War Of The Rebellion: A Compilation Of The Official Records Of The Union And Confederate Armies* (OR): Series I, Vol. XXI, Chapter XXXIII p. 1114.

## *Introduction*

On September 5 [1862] my command crossed the Potomac at White's Ford, and bivouacked that night near the Three Springs, in the State of Maryland. Not having any cavalry with me except the Black Horse, under Captain Randolph, I directed him, after crossing the Potomac, to take part of his company and scout to the right, in order to avoid a surprise-of the column from that direction. For the thorough and efficient manner in which this duty was discharged, and for the valuable service rendered generally while attached to my headquarters, I desire to make special mention of this company and its officers, Captain Randolph and Lieutenants Payne, Tyle[r] and Smith, who frequently transmitted orders in the absence of staff officers.

T. J. JACKSON,

Lieutenant-General. <sup>13</sup>

### *After the War*

The bonds of attachment formed between the members of the Black Horse were evident all their lives. They met actively as a veterans group. Whenever a member died, the survivors attended the funeral en mass, and the company flag was always used to drape the coffin. Their bond to each other was unbreakable and enduring and dominated their lives. For example, after a life of accomplishment to be envied by anyone, James Keith wrote in a forward to a little book of his speeches:

To the Black Horse Troop.

---

<sup>13</sup> *O. R.* - Series I-Volume XIX, Chapter XXXI, p. 952. September 3-20, 1862.-The Maryland Campaign. No. 264. -Reports Of Lieut. Gen. Thomas J. Jackson, C. S. Army, Commanding Army Corps, Of Operations September 5-27.

*Introduction*

In tender memory of the Dead with affectionate greetings to the living.  
My proudest thought is that I was one of them.<sup>14</sup>

---

<sup>14</sup> James Keith, *Addresses on Several Occasions*, (Richmond, Virginia: Privately printed, 1917).



**2**

## **From Germany to Germantown**

Our nineteenth century family begins with “Honest” John Martin and his wife Susan A. Fisher, the parents of the Martin Boys. However, John Martin’s ancestors came to Virginia much earlier.

Fauquier County’s Crocket Park, on Meetz Road, is the destination of thousands of visitors each year as they fish and swim in the beautiful lake and stroll through the woods. Hardly any know that they are in the middle of one of the earliest settlements in Fauquier. The lake dam is about where the colonists’ grist mill was located. Only a few hundred yards Northeast, just outside the park boundary, lies the cemetery believed to contain the graves of some of the settlers. But, before the colonists came to Fauquier, they had been in Virginia for a few years, nearby.

## ***The Immigrant: John Joseph Martin***

The Martin<sup>15</sup> boys' descended from John Joseph Martin, a 1714 immigrant from Germany to Virginia who settled first in the Germanna colony near the Wilderness on the Rapidan River in what is now Orange County, Virginia.

## ***The First Colony at Germanna***

There has been a good deal of research on this small group of Germans who were brought to Virginia as part of a scheme to mine precious metals. Their story is fascinating.<sup>16 17 18 19 20</sup>

---

<sup>15</sup> The name is also found in records spelled as Marton and Marten.

<sup>16</sup> John W. Wayland, "Germanna: Outpost of Adventure 1714-1956," *The Germanna Record* 7 (1956): 17. This reference is an extended treatment of the history of the settlement. The colony of 1,200-1,300 acres was located in a peninsula of the Rapidan, on the south side, above where state route 3 crosses the river. The Memorial Foundation of the Germanna Colonies, Inc., whose members are mostly descendants of the original settlers, bought some of the original land and erected a memorial. Germanna Community College is on property donated by the foundation. *The Germanna Record* was published by the foundation and chronicles the history of the settlement and the genealogies of the settlers, including those who moved to Germantown. In 2001, the Foundation opened the Browdus Martin Germanna Visitors Center and library, at Germanna, Virginia, next to Germanna Community College.

<sup>17</sup> Arthur L. Keith, "The German Colony of 1717," *William and Mary College Quarterly*, series 1, volume 26, issue 2 (October 1917): 79-95; volume 26, issue 3 (January 1918): 178-195; volume 26, issue 4 (April 1918): 234-249.

<sup>18</sup> Rush W. Boyer, "The Pioneer village of Germantown: A Tour of Fauquier Counties' First White Settlement," *Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, June 9, 1955, E-1.

<sup>19</sup> H. C. Groome, *Fauquier During the Proprietorship* (Richmond, Virginia: Old Dominion Press, 1927): 113-130.

In 1709, hundreds of Palatine refugees from the Rhineland had been driven from their homes by famine and religious persecution. Therefore, they sought refuge in England. Under the Swiss Baron Christopher de Graffenreid, some of these people were settled on the Neuse and Pamlico Rivers in North Carolina.

When Baron de Graffenreid returned to Europe, Lt. Governor Alexander Spotswood requested him to recruit for him some German miners. Graffenreid persuaded 14 individuals with families totaling 42 persons from the town of Siegen and Muesen in the principality of Nassau-Siegen, Germany to come to Virginia. The First Germanna Colony arrived in Virginia at Tappahannock in the spring of 1714, and then came up the Rappahannock River where they settled 20 miles west of Fredericksburg at a location that would be called Fort Germanna.<sup>21</sup>

### ***Germantown, Fauquier County, Virginia***

Some of the colony then moved to Germantown, about nineteen miles north, now in Fauquier County, but then in Stafford and later Prince William County.

By 1718, differences arose between the governor and the Germans, so the colonists purchased 1,805 acres of fertile land lying further into the Virginia wilderness. They packed all of their provisions on their heads, traveled northward

---

<sup>20</sup> Benjamin C. Holtzclaw, "Germantown Revived," *The Germanna Record* 2 (April, 1962): 11-76. This is the most extensive treatment of the settlement and land transactions of Germantown.

<sup>21</sup> "First German Settlement in Virginia," from the web site of The Memorial Foundation of the Germanna Colonies in Virginia, online <<http://germanna.org/history.html>>, accessed 24 April, 2002.

along an old Iroquois trail, and settled upon their new homeland in what is presently southern Fauquier County.



**Old grave at Germantown, believed to be that of Rev. John Henry Haeger, who died in 1737. C. H. Huffman photo, October 19, 1952.**

It was agreed that the property and its expense would be divided equally among the following settlers: Melchior Brumback, Joseph Coons, Harman Fishback, John Fishback, Peter Hitt, Jacob Holtzclaw, John Henry Hoffman, John Kemper, John Joseph Martin, Jacob Rector, John Spilman and Tillman Weaver.

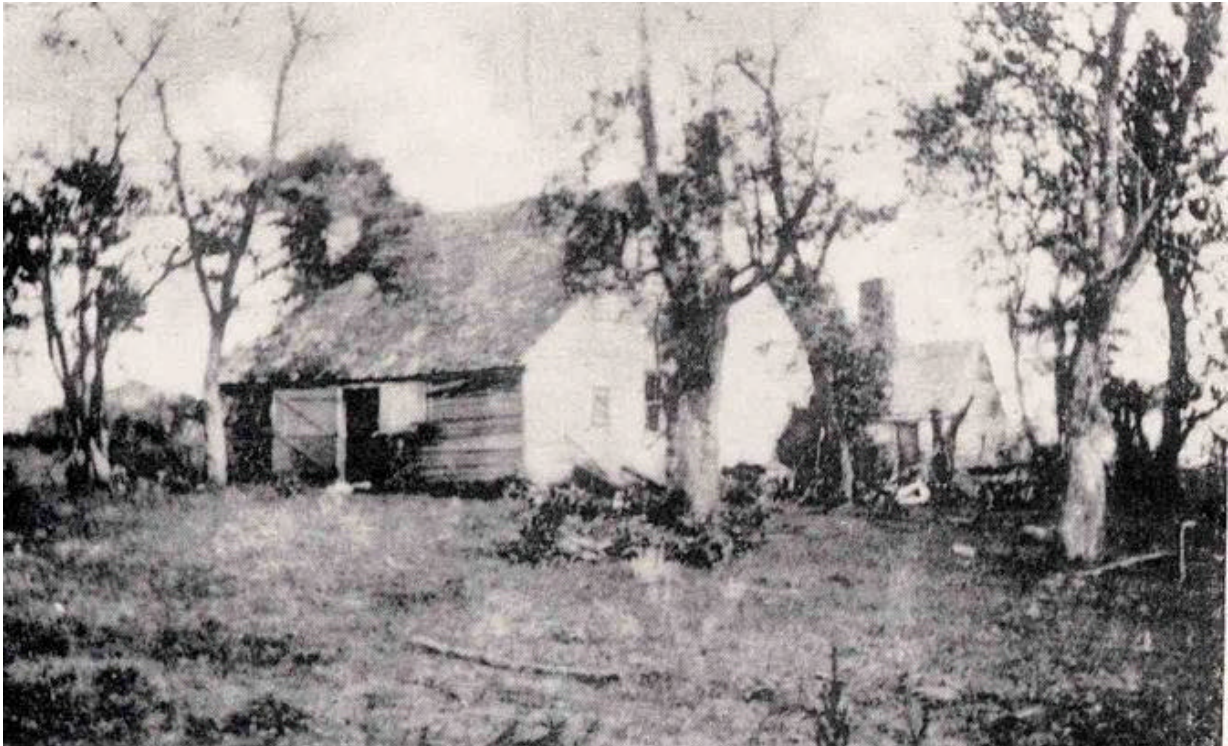
Lots were drawn to assign the rectangular parcels of farm land. Homes were built on the southwestern side of Licking Run which flowed through every farm. The settlement was named Germantown.

Being devout members of the German Reformed Church, each landowner also agreed to donate ten acres to form a glebe whereupon Fauquier County's first church, parsonage, and school were constructed.

Agriculture was practiced in the feudal German tradition with the exception of their cultivation of tobacco. A grist mill and a saw mill were soon in operation. German Rolling Road was built for easier transport of their plentiful goods and crops to the-Falmouth market.

**Wayland: Chapter X FROM GERMANNA TO GERMANTOWN**

This tract was divided into twelve equal portions, but evidently the families did not at once distribute themselves upon them. They were still on the frontier and knew not what dangers they might apprehend from hostile tribes of Indians.



**The old Weaver House at Germantown, removed some years ago.  
On it was the date 1721.**

They no doubt remembered how people in many parts of Europe had sought safety in times of danger. Today, on a hill overlooking Licking Run and the fertile fields bordering it, are the marks of a number of cabins that stood near together.

Perhaps a palisade surrounded them. Here, we may believe, the hardy pioneers first lived, going out to their fields in the daytime and returning at night. As time passed and greater safety was assured, the several families erected dwellings on their respective farms. For a season at least they continued to enjoy the special immunities from public and county levies that had been granted them at Germanna. They were still on the frontier and had a defensive value to the older settlements.

Appropriately, the village, the settlement, was called Germantown. The locality had natural advantages and evidently had been selected with care and foresight. There is a considerable portion of bottom land along the stream; the higher fields are well drained, but not much hilly. Licking Run is a good-sized stream and provided a good site for a grist mill, sawmill, and other operations to be run by water power. At several places there are ledges of stones that are impregnated with iron, and this probably had a good deal to do with the settlers making choice of this spot. It is doubtful, however, whether they ever found this ore very profitable.

In a grove on an elevation near the present Hinegardner home<sup>22</sup> is an old graveyard, and it is probable that the church and possibly the school house stood there. All of the graves but one are marked with small rough stones. The one exception is notable—over it are broad, heavy slabs of reddish-brown stone, with tall rounded-top slabs of the same kind upright at head and foot.

---

<sup>22</sup> Now owned by Merle Fallon.

Evidently this is the grave of some person of unusual distinction, and we may well believe it to be the tomb of Pastor Haeger, who died in 1737, at the age of 93. To this date (1956) no inscription has been discovered.

Not far from the southeast corner within the 1800-acre tract, now a short distance south of the railroad, is a monument marking the birthplace of Chief Justice John Marshall, who was born here on September 24, 1755.

### **DISPERSION FROM GERMANNA AND GERMANTOWN**

Before many years John Hoffman and perhaps others from Germantown, and a number of the Lutherans from the Germanna colonies of 1717 and 1719, moved down into what is now Madison County, where their descendants are numerous today.

The ease with which good lands could be acquired in Virginia in the 18th century was recognized by men of thrift and enterprise, and among these we must number the founders of Germantown and their compatriots. On June 10, 1731, John Fishback, Jacob Holtzclaw, Henry Settler, Jacob Sengaback, Peter Reid, Michael Shower, John Vandehouse, George Wolf, William Carpenter, and John Richlu, "in behalf of themselves and other German Protestants," obtained a grant of 50,000 acres between the Blue Ridge and the Shenandoah River, in the present counties of Warren and Page. Peter Reid was probably Peter Heit (Hitt). Thus we perceive that dispersion, expansion, was going on to the north and west as well as to the south and west.

In 1732 Col. William Byrd saw at Germanna "a Baker's Dozen of ruinous Tenements," the ones, no doubt, abandoned eleven or twelve years before when the colony moved to Germantown. Germantown, long since, has been a

"deserted village." Its name is no more on the maps. Midland is near the site; Bealeton, Opal, and Calverton form a triangle enclosing it. But Germanna and Germantown both allure the feet of pilgrims who honor courage and devotion and cherish a goodly heritage.

According to author William Martin:

Germantown's settlers prospered; however, this good fortune resulted in acquisitions of abundant land elsewhere. By the time of the Revolution, nearly all of the original-settlers of Germantown had relocated.<sup>23</sup>

### ***What Kind of People Were They?***

Author Martin notes the middle class roots of the colonists.

One question which interests descendants probably more than who their ancestors were, is what sort of people were they? The statement these immigrants "were miners from Nassau-Siegen" may be somewhat misleading and give us too low an opinion of their character and station in life. Many of them had grown up on farms, and probably had been engaged in mining and iron manufacturing in Germany, which is natural enough in the view of the fact these were the chief businesses of the Siegen District. These people have been referred to in other research as mostly mechanics and master workmen in their several trades.

Most of these immigrants came from the middle class and were not mere laborers. John Kemper's grandfather was a blacksmith at Muesen, who had prospered there

and amassed landed property, and his father was probably a smith and a church elder.

John Joseph Martin's grandfather was an associated justice in the court of mines. John Jacob Rector's father was a watchmaker. . . Rev. Henry Haeger was both a teacher and a minister. . . there is enough information to show they, and their ancestors, were prosperous middle class German citizens.

Enough has been said to show our ancestors were the reverse of a poor lot in Germany, but their connections in American were just as respectable as they had been in Germany: One of Jacob Holtzclaw's daughters married Jeremiah Darnall, a magistrate of Fauquier County and descendant of a long line of English gentry who had been settled for 200 years in the Northern Neck of Virginia. Jacob's eldest son, John Holzclaw, and the latter's son, Benjamin, married into the family of Brigadier General William Russell of Revolutionary War fame, and a family with aristocratic connections.

John Fishback's son, Josiah, married a daughter of the illustrious Thomas Nelson of Revolutionary War fame, and later Governor of Virginia. The Kempers married at an early date into the Lawson and Timberlake families, people of excellent standing in northern Virginia. And, many other descendants of our colony have made their mark. Arkansas Governors, E. W. Conway, J. S. Conway and H. M. Rector were descendants of John Jacob Rector and John Fishback. The Honorable R. R. Hitt, member of Congress from Illinois, descended from Peter Hitt. James T. Holtzclaw of

---

<sup>23</sup> Diane Gulick, *C. M. Crockett Park*, Fauquier County Parks and Recreation, Warrenton, Virginia. Sponsored by The Memorial Foundation of the Germanna Colonies In Virginia, Inc. This is a small flyer for distribution to the public.

Montgomery, Alabama, a brigadier general, and brevet major general in the Confederate Army, was a member of General Lee's staff. . . Many other descendants of our colony have been lawyers, judges, ministers, university professors, etc., and have taken their places worthily in the life of this nation.<sup>24</sup>

### ***The Colony Disperses***

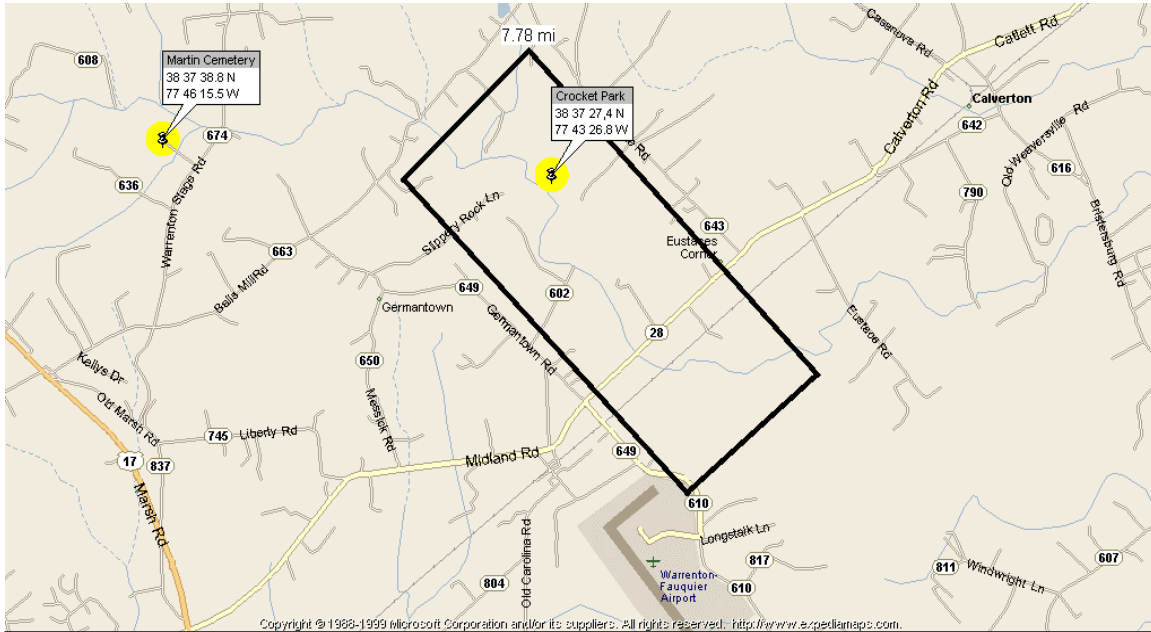
The colony gradually integrated into the Fauquier community. Author Martin continues:

The colony at Germantown was never the center of a large German settlement, nor did it have many German neighbors, as was the case in Pennsylvania and the many German settlements in the Valley of Virginia. Prince William County and Fauquier County, were largely settled by English people. Probably our colony held together as long as the older people lived, and services in the church were held in German at least as late as 1748, and probably longer. However, the second generation began to lose its German.

At least half of the children of the colonists, if not more, married English people. Even some of the colonists, themselves, married second husbands or wives who were English. So, the German identity of our colony was gradually lost, and probably by 1760 or 1770, there was little to differentiate the children and grandchildren of our

---

<sup>24</sup> William A. Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia* (Bowie, Maryland: Heritage Books, Inc., 1995): 23-24. This is the most recent published research on the early Martin family. This reference has an outstanding narrative on the establishment of Germanna and Germantown.



**The Location of the Original Germantown Settlement and the Honest John Martin Cemetery (See Chapter 4) on a Modern Map**

colony from their English neighbors. They had become Americans, and many of them served loyally, and some with distinction, in the War of Independence.<sup>25</sup>

There are many descendants of the original Germantown settlers in Fauquier today. Extensive work has been done on their genealogy, including the Martin family.<sup>26 27 28</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup> Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia*, 18-19.

<sup>26</sup> Benjamin C. Holtzclaw, "John Joseph Martin of Germanna and Germantown," *The Germanna Record* 1 (July, 1961):

## ***The Germantown Settlement Boundaries***

The Germantown settlement was located north of Midland with its southeastern corner abutting the Warrenton-Fauquier Airport. Fauquier County's Crocket Park is toward the northwestern end of the tract. The park lake is on the site of the old millpond.

Martin family genealogist William Martin noted: "The grant to our twelve families consisted of 1,805 acres on Licking Run (a creek) and is dated 2 August 1724. "The tract was a rectangle with the creek running pretty much across the middle of it from end to end ...as late as 1936, was still called the Germantown neighborhood ...."<sup>29 30 31 32</sup>

---

<sup>27</sup> Benjamin C. Holtzclaw, "Ancestry and Descendants of the Nassau-Siegen Immigrants to Virginia 1714-1750, *The Germanna Record* 5 (1964): 409-422. Here Holtzclaw examines the early roots of the Martin family in Germany and extends his earlier Martin family study, especially of John Joseph Martin.

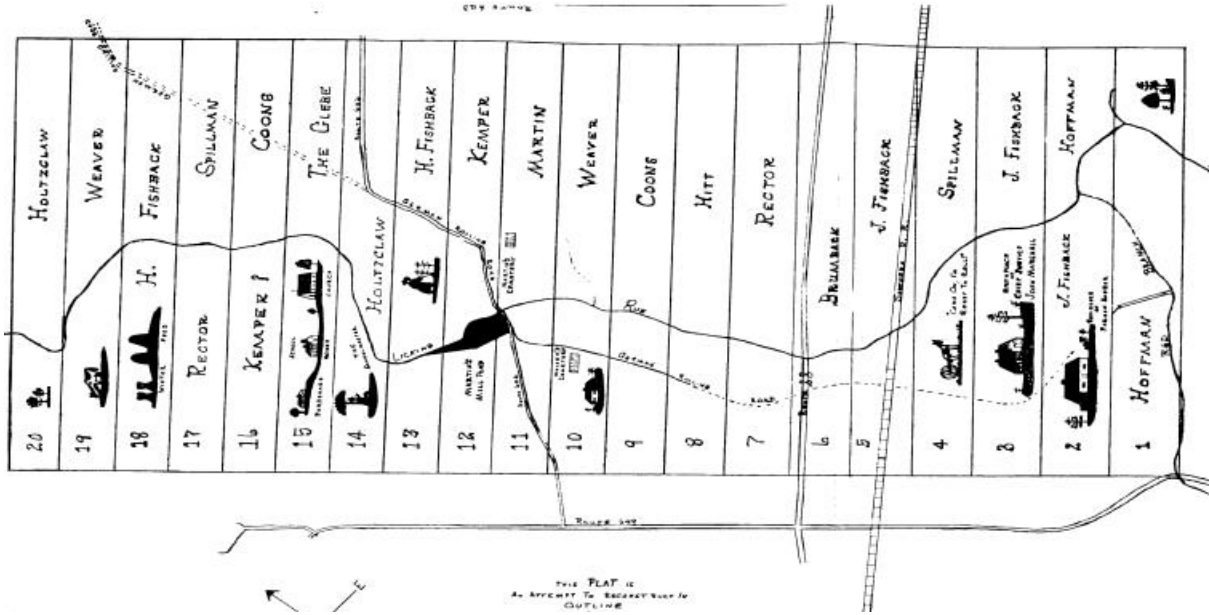
<sup>28</sup> William J. Hinke, "The 1714 Colony of Germanna, Virginia," *The Virginia Magazine of Biography and History* 40 (1932): 317-327, and 41 (1933): 41-49.

<sup>29</sup> Martin, A. *Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna Virginia*, 16.

<sup>30</sup> The Germantown name faded quickly with the onset of World War II and the adverse association of the name with Nazi Germany.

<sup>31</sup> Woodford B. Hackley, "The Plat of Germantown," *The Germanna Record* 2 (April, 1962): 77-81. Germantown location plotted on modern map using Hackley map.

<sup>32</sup> Groome, *Fauquier During The Proprietorship*, 130. "The Germantown tract was a parallelogram the sides of which were 2 & 1/3 miles long and the ends 1 & 1/16 miles long." This yields only 1,586 acres. Later research showed this was not correct.



**Map Representing the Most Recent Research on Ownership of Germantown Settlement Property By  
Woolford B. Hackley**

The map results from extensive research on the various land holding and transactions of the Germantown settlers. It is the most authoritative statement of the various land holdings and their owners.<sup>33</sup> The Hackley map is a significant improvement over another oft-cited map by Huffman.<sup>34</sup>

Wayland speculates that Lott 11 is probably where the settlers' church and school stood. The graveyard contains a large tombstone that was perhaps the grave

---

<sup>33</sup> Hackley, "The Plat of Germantown," 77-81.

<sup>34</sup> Wayland, "Germanna: Outpost of Adventure 1714-1956," 70. The map in this reference is credited to Charles Herbert Huffman. Huffman was a former editor of *The Germanna Record*.

of Reverend John Henry Haeger, the religious leader of the settlement.<sup>35 36 37</sup> State route 602 no longer is a through road across the Germantown lots. When Crocket Part was built, the section of the road east of the dam was discontinued. With the exception of the park, the Germantown land is relatively undisturbed.

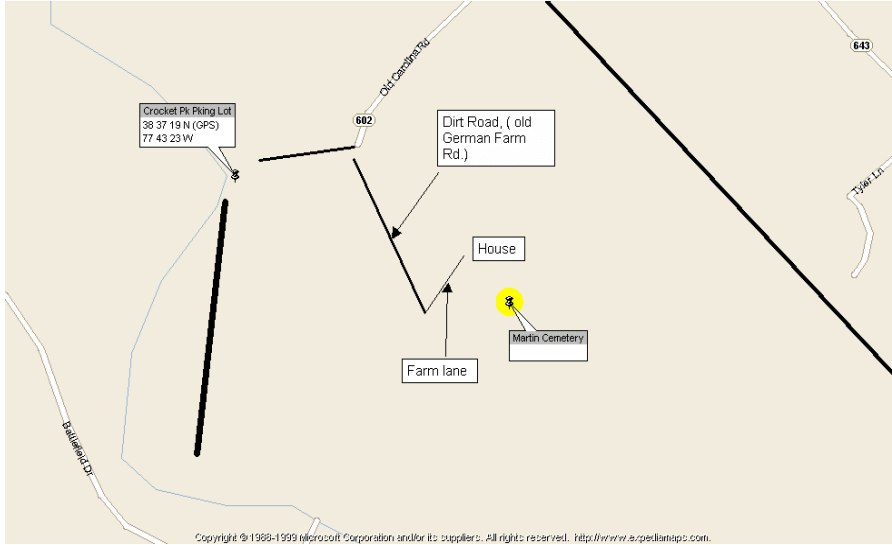
---

<sup>35</sup> Wayland, "Germanna: Outpost of Adventure 1714-1956," 69.

<sup>36</sup> This cemetery is located at 10137 Rogues Rd., Midland, VA, and is on land that was owned by Jean Heingardner, and in 2002 by Merle Fallon.

<sup>37</sup> Note that lot 11 is identified as belonging to Martin. However, it is not the location of the Honest John Martin family cemetery discussed in Chapter 4.

*From Germany to Germantown*





### 3

## **The Family of Elias Martin**

The Martin family was prolific, with many couples having eight or more children. Even after only three generations, there were many descendants of the immigrant John Joseph Martin. We begin the study of the family of our Black Horse Martin brothers with their grandfather Elias Martin and his forbears.<sup>38</sup>

### ***Fauquier County in the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Century***

Our Martin family began its history in Fauquier County early in the Nineteenth century. They became residents of Fauquier County when it was created in 1759, split off from Prince William County and given its current boundaries. The county was part of the Proprietorship of the Northern Neck. Almost all the Fauquier land had been granted by the Proprietors by 1750. Many migrated from Fauquier to the Shenandoah Valley and the Carolinas. A “Carolina Road” ran across the middle of

---

<sup>38</sup> The Martin family of Germantown has been the subject of extensive genealogical research. The most recent is the book by William A. Martin, already cited. Much of the Martin information in this book draws directly from this reference. The interested reader is encouraged to pursue this book for a fascinating demonstration of genealogical exploration and reasoning. See this work for the ancestors of John Joseph Martin in Germany.

the county. The first settlers arrived in the 1720s and the county grew rapidly. In 1760, based on the count of 1693 tithes, an estimated 3,500 people lived in Fauquier. By 1775, eleven years after Elias Martin was born, the population was about 8,000-8,500. By the end of the century the population was about 15,000, and reached a peak in the 1830s of about 30,000. This number was not surpassed for over one-hundred years.<sup>39</sup>

### ***John Joseph Martin and His Wife Eve***

Elias Martin was the grandson of the immigrant John Joseph Martin and his wife Eve. John Joseph Martin (Johann Jost Merten) was born three years before the College of William and Mary opened in Williamsburg, 24 May 1691 in Mueson, Nassau-Siegen, Germany, and emigrated from Germany in 1713 with the first Germanna colony of 1714. His ancestry goes back to the 1500s. He was the seventh known generation of his family. (See the earlier chapter on Germanna and Germantown.) He was married twice and had about ten children, including Tilman.

### ***Tilman and Elizabeth Martin***

Elias was the son of Tilman Martin (born ca 1730-35; died 1779) and his wife Elizabeth. Tilman and Elizabeth had about eight children. Elias had two brothers who were soldiers killed in the Revolutionary War. Elias' brother Joel married

---

<sup>39</sup> John P. Alcock, *Fauquier Families 1759-1799* (Iberian Publishing Company, Athens, Georgia , 1994) v.

Mary Ann Hitt. He was killed in 1781. Elias' brother William was also believed killed in 1781. <sup>40</sup> <sup>41</sup> <sup>42</sup> [Check murder of bastard child reference M 8-446, 1787.]

## ***Elias Martin***

Elias Martin was born 15 September 1764 and died 26 November 1832,<sup>43</sup> at age 68. His life spanned a period in our history that began shortly before the Revolutionary War and ended in the month that Andrew Jackson was elected President (and stopped in Warrenton on the way to his inauguration).

---

<sup>40</sup> Holtzclaw, "Ancestry and Descendants of the Nassau-Siegen Immigrants to Virginia 1714-1750," 409-422. Holtzclaw concludes that Elias was the son of John Martin, Tilman Martin's brother. William Martin refutes this conclusion.

<sup>41</sup> Martin, A. *Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna Virginia*, 312-14. This addendum revised the assessment given in the main body of the text. He concludes that Tilman was the son of John Joseph Martin.

<sup>42</sup> Ruth and Sam Sparacio, *Virginia Court Records: Fauquier County Minute Books 1787* (McLean, Virginia: The Antient Press, 1997): 38. Cites the court's determination that Elizabeth is mother of William who died in the Continental Army, and that Elias Martin was his heir at law.

<sup>43</sup> "Elias Martin Family Bible, 1764-1874," *National Historical Magazine* (February 1944) 78-2: 102-03. All dates for the Elias Martin Family in this chapter are from this bible, unless otherwise noted. This magazine was published by the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, Washington, D.C. "The following entries are copied from on old Bible now in possession of Ethel Maddox Byrd. November 1943: Elias Marten His Booke Bot of B. Roe 14<sup>th</sup> June 1809. Printed and published in Philadelphia by Mathew Cary, No. 122 Market Street 1808." Very late in my research, after months of searching, this bible turned up. I found it by searching the Periodical Source Index (PERSIS) available on line from <www.Ancestry.com>, sponsored by Broderbund, Banner Blue Division, Novato, CA 94948-6125. In a search of the index, I found a reference to an Elias Martin bible. There were many Elias Martins scattered around the country, so it was a shot in the dark, but I obtained it anyway through an interlibrary loan. Sometimes you get lucky. It is the source of most of the specific information on the Martin family and cleared up many mysteries.

Elias is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery. His tombstone is a rude fieldstone with just his initials, age and death date.<sup>44 45</sup>

**[Get photograph of gravestone.]**

### *Two Wives Named Mary*

Elias Martin's first marriage was to Mary Mountjoy in Fauquier County. (See Appendix 5 for details on her family.) Their marriage bond is dated October 12, 1791.<sup>46</sup> He was 27. Her birthdate is unknown, but since she did not require permission from her parents to marry, she was at least 21, therefore born before 1770. We know she was his first wife because we have the death date and age at death of his second wife, also named Mary, from the Elias Martin Family Bible. From this we can compute her birthdate. This other Mary would have been only

---

<sup>44</sup> Elias Martin tombstone, Martin Family Cemetery, Fauquier County, Virginia. The cemetery is on Honest John Martin's Licking Run Farm, located .4 miles North of the intersection of the modern day Warrenton Stage Rd. (Rt. 674) and Edwards Rd. (Rt. 636) south of Hurleytown. Black Horseman Lane ends in the more or less center of this Farm. The cemetery is in the field to the South at the end of the lane. (Coordinates: 38° 37' 37.9 N, 77° 46' 15.3 W.) The stone is marked "E. M./ Age 68/ Died Nov. 26, 1832." The fieldstone is leaning up against the N.W. wall of the cemetery. We know this is Elias's tombstone because it corresponds to his death information in his family bible. I had known of the existence of this tombstone for many years, but could not identify it until the Elias Martin bible surfaced.

<sup>45</sup> Nancy Baird, Carol Jordan and Joseph Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2 volumes (Bowie, Maryland: Heritage Books, Inc., 2000) 2:144.

<sup>46</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 1: 332. John Herndon, bondsman, 50 pounds. This is the date of the bond. He was her stepfather, second husband of her mother Sarah Chapman. (See Appendix 5 on Mountjoy family.)

Know all men by these presents that we, Elias Martin and John Hinson are held and firmly bound to his Excellency Beverly Randolph Esqr. Governor of Virginia, in the Sum of Fifty pounds to which payment well and truly to be made to the said Randolph and his Successors for the use of the common Wealth we bind our selves and each of our Heirs Exors and Adtors jointly and severally firmly by these presents sealed with our seals and dated this 12<sup>th</sup> day of October 1791. The condition of the above Obligation is that whereas a marriage shortly intended to be solemnized between Elias Martin and Mary Mountjoy for which a licence hath issued Now if there be no lawfull cause to Obstruct the said intended Marriage then this Obligation to be void or else to remain in full force. Elias Martin Seal  
in presence of John Hinson Seal  
J. Brooke

ten-years-old at the marriage of Elias and Mary Mountjoy. She had to be his second wife.

Elias' second wife Mary's last name is unknown. But, we know she was born 11 April 1781. If they were married a year or so before the birth of her first child, Mildred, their marriage would have been about 1804/5. He would have been about 40 and she about 23. There is no marriage record for them in Fauquier County. She lived for twenty years after her husband's death and at age 71 died 17 September 1852.<sup>47 48 49 50</sup> In the 1850 census<sup>51</sup> (see image below) at age 69, she was living with her daughter Ann's family.

---

<sup>47</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible. "...aged 71 years, five months and six days."

836	852	Mary Marton.	69	W
837	852	William P. Ficklin	44	M
		Ann, d. do	44	W
		George M. do	12	M
		William L. do	10	M
		Jno M. do	6	M

1850 U. S. Census, Fauquier County, Ficklin Family

### *Elias' Will*

Elias Martin's will was dated November 12, 1832, fourteen days before his death, and was probated December 24, 1832.<sup>52</sup> He left his wife Polly (a nickname for Mary) land on Licking Run. He mentions all five of his children in his will.

---

<sup>48</sup> Mary Martin estate appraisal (1852), Fauquier County Will Book 24: 246, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia. Date of appraisal was October 26, 1852. The total value of her estate was \$678.95. She must have died without a will, none was found.

<sup>49</sup> Mary Martin estate sale (1852), Fauquier County Will Book 24: 248, November 24, 1852, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia. Many items sold to Lewis Shumate and William P. Ficklin, her sons-in-law.

<sup>50</sup> Deaths were not recorded in Fauquier County until 1853.

<sup>51</sup> Mary Martin household, 1850 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia; Ashby District, dwelling 836, family 853, National Archives Micropublication, roll 930, page 256. The census data for 1850 was as of October 1. The census taker spelled her name Marton and the census is indexed under that spelling. Note that her household was listed next to the household of her daughter Ann Ficklin's. Interestingly, four doors away, dwelling 832 was the family of Charles Randolph, father of Robert Randolph, the third captain of the Black Horse Cavalry.

<sup>52</sup> Elias Martin will (1832), Fauquier County Will Book 129-30, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia..

He had two children by his first wife and three by his second. His children married into families of the Fauquier gentry.

The five children were:<sup>53</sup>

By his first wife Mary Mountjoy:

1. William E. Martin who married Nancy Robbins of Tennessee, and who died young.
2. John Martin, who married Susan A. Fisher.

By his second wife Mary \_\_\_\_\_:

3. Ann Coleman Martin who married William Phillips Ficklin.
4. Mildred Waggoner Martin who married Lewis Shumate, Jr.
5. George Washington Martin, not married and who died young.

Only John lived past middle age.

### *William E. Martin*

William was born 2 December 1794 and at age 38 died 21 November 1833. He married Nancy Robbins of Tennessee in August 1824.<sup>54</sup> He has no marriage record,

---

<sup>53</sup> Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia* 18-19. The author speculated that Elias Beverly Martin who married Elizabeth J. Kennard and Jane G. (or E.) Scott in Fauquier County was a possible son of Elias, but now agrees with me that, given that he is not mentioned in Elias' bible or will, this is unlikely.

<sup>54</sup> Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia* 18-19. The author identifies William E. Martin as a son of Elias Martin who married Elizabeth W. Browne, but notes that the conclusion is tentative. He was appropriately cautious. He is not Elias Martin's son. The fact that George W. Martin's will mentions his "deceased" brother, William E. Martin and the discovery of Elias' family bible and its listing of William E. Martin's marriage to Nancy Robbins settles the

death record or will in Fauquier County. The only record of him the author has found is in the Elias Martin Family Bible, and in his brother George's will.

*John Martin*

John Martin was born 8 October 1796, and died at his farm in Fauquier 25 July 1876<sup>55</sup> <sup>56</sup> <sup>57</sup> aged two months shy of 80. He married his neighbor Susan A. Fisher<sup>58</sup>, 12 January 1829. There is no record of a middle name. (See Chapter 4 for details on John Martin's family.)

*Mildred Waggoner Martin*

Mildred Waggoner Martin was born 22 September 1806. Rev. John Ogilvie, pastor of Upper Goose Creek Baptist church, married Mildred and Lewis Shumate

---

issue. Author Martin notes that even if his William E. Martin is not a son of Elias, " he is still most certainly descended from John Joseph Martin, the Germanna immigrant of 1714."

<sup>55</sup> John Martin death notice, *Alexandria Gazette*, Alexandria Virginia, Monday July 31, 1876. Clipping in the possession of John Gott, Fauquier Heritage and Preservation Foundation, Marshall, Virginia. "John Martin died at his farm in lower Fauquier on the 25<sup>th</sup> inst."

<sup>56</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible.

<sup>57</sup> John Martin will (1875), Fauquier County Will Book 35: 403. County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia. His will is dated November 4, 1875. It was probated 31 August, 1876.

<sup>58</sup> Susan's middle initial was A. in some records and E. in others. The initial A. was used in both Martin Family bibles and on her tombstone. In several obituaries of her children, the middle initial E. was used, perhaps in confusion because her daughter was named Susan Elizabeth.

12 January 1829. Her death date is uncertain.(See Appendix 6 for further details on this family.)

*George Washington Martin*

George Washington Martin was born 3 November 1810. At the young age of 26, he died 16 April 1837. He probably did not marry as no wife or children are mentioned in his will. George's will is dated 6 October 1836,<sup>59</sup> almost three years after his father's death, and six months before his own death. He mentions his mother Mary Martin; unnamed children of his brother, William E. Martin, now deceased; his now married sister Ann C. Ficklin and his brother John Martin.<sup>60</sup>

*Ann Coleman Martin*

Ann Coleman Martin was born 7 April 1805 and died 22 February 1854 at age 48.<sup>61</sup> The Reverend George Lemmon married Ann and William Phillips Ficklin, 6 April 1836. (See Appendix 3 for further details on this family.)

---

<sup>59</sup> George W. Martin will (1836), Fauquier County Will Book 15: 159, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia

<sup>60</sup> It is curious that he did not mention his sister Mildred.

<sup>61</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible. Her name is shown as Nancy Coleman Martin when her birth was listed, but Ann C. Martin for her marriage to Ficklin and her death. Are these two people? The same middle name is shown for both entries, Nancy is not mentioned again in the bible nor is she found in Fauquier County records. No Nancy is mentioned in Elias' will, Thus, I assume these are the same person and that Nancy is a transcription or entry error; or perhaps they named her Nancy at birth and changed it to Ann. Examination of the original bible entries would be helpful.

In 1850, the U. S. Census shows these families living in close proximity along Meetz Road. Elias is dead, but his second wife Mary is living with her daughter Mildred who married Lewis Shumate. Nearby is her Daughter Ann, married to William Ficklin; and further down the road is the Fisher family of her stepson John Martin's wife Susan.<sup>62</sup>

---

<sup>62</sup> <sup>62</sup> Mary Martin household, 1850 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia; Ashby District, dwelling 836, family 853, National Archives Micropublication, roll 930, page 256. The census data for 1850 was as of October 1. The census taker spelled her name Marton and the census is indexed under that spelling. Note that her household was listed next to the household of her daughter Ann Ficklin's, dwelling 837. Dwelling 842 was John Martin's. Dwelling 827 was Lewis and Mildred Shumate's. In dwelling 848 was John Martin's wife Susan's father and family. See Appendix 3, 4 and 6 for details. Interestingly, four doors away, dwelling 832 was the family of Charles Randolph, father of Robert Randolph, the third captain of the Black Horse Cavalry.

52 SCHEDULE L—Free Inhabitants in Ashby District in the County of Kanawha State of Virginia enumerated by me, on the 11<sup>th</sup> day of Oct 1850. E. M. Newson Ass. Marshal

Dwellings or other place of abode	Family numbered in the order of visitation	The Name of every Person whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1850, was in this family.	DESCRIPTION.			Profession, Occupation, or Trade of each Male Person over 15 years of age.	Value of Real Estate owned.	Place or State, Naming the State, Territory, or County.	Married within the year, A widow within the year, Remarried & died within the year.			Whether deaf and dumb, blind, insane, idiotic, pauper, or convict.
			Age.	Sex.	Color, or Indian.				10	11	12	
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13
847	847	Levi Shormaker	46	m	w	Farmer	20000	Pa				
		Melrose do	44	f	w	-		"				
		George W. do	20	m	w	"		"				
		Mary E. do	18	f	w	"		"				
		Jno. W. do	16	m	w	"		"				
		Nancy do	14	f	w	"		"				
		Jones do	12	f	w	"		"				
		Lucy do	10	f	w	"		"				
		Melrose do	8	f	w	"		"				
		Alaer do	6	f	w	"		"				
		Ella do	2	f	w	"		"				
848	865	Capt Thomas Fisher	65	m	w	Farmer	10000	"				
		Martha W do	46	f	w	"		"				
		James A do	21	m	w	"		"				
		Sarah M do	19	f	w	"		"				
		Mary E do	16	f	w	"		"				
849	866	Alexander Fletcher	40	m	w	Shoemaker		"				
		Luther do	35	f	w	"		"				

Add more lines to census above

[Put a little more data with the girls.]



## The Family of Honest John Martin

In the later half of the nineteenth century, Meetz Road (formerly the Fredericksburg-Warrenton Road) was a busy thoroughfare in Fauquier because it closely paralleled the railroad spur from Warrenton to the main Southern Railway line at Route 28. [What was name of RR then?]

Today, a drive from Warrenton East on Meetz Road takes you through a countryside that is still mostly rural and residential with large farms under cultivation. After about six miles you come to Beech Road (formerly Shumates Mill Road) on the right, then in three hundred yards, to Casanova Road on the left This latter intersection is known as Godfrey's Corner.

Further along Meetz, you pass The Grove, a Randolph family home,<sup>63</sup> then Crocket Park (the center of the original Germantown settlement), and Eastern View, where Robert E. Lee visited as a child, finally arriving at Route 28. It is an old and historic road.

---

<sup>63</sup> Now the home of Randolph Scott E. Carter, The Grove, 5338 Balls Mill Road, Midland, VA.

When you reach the intersection of Beech Road, and gaze to the West, you are looking towards the center of the 405 acre farm of Honest John Martin and his wife Susan A. Fisher, the parents of the Martin boys. They were prosperous members of Fauquier's landed gentry.

If you examine a current county tax map, you will find that the original boundaries of the farm are undisturbed, although the property has been divided, over the years, into many parcels. The land is mostly wooded now, but about three hundred yards down Beach road, and two hundred yards into the trees to the South, lies the burned out shell of the Martin Home Farm residence.<sup>64</sup>

John was the son of Elias Martin and his first wife Mary Mountjoy.<sup>65 66</sup> (See preceding chapter for details on the Elias Martin family.)

John's wife Susan A. Fisher was the daughter of William Thomas Fisher and his first wife Mary Frances Gordon—a very prosperous family with roots in Stafford County. (See Appendix 4 for details.)

“Honest”<sup>67</sup> John Martin was born in 8 October 1796, and died at his farm in Fauquier, “ Tuesday, the 25<sup>th</sup> day of July 1876, aged 79 years, 8 months and 17

---

<sup>64</sup> After standing over 170 years, the early nineteenth century frame house burned to the ground in the Fall of 2001.

<sup>65</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible.

<sup>66</sup> Donald G. Martin, compiler, “John Martin-Susan A. Fisher family group sheet” (undocumented); ancestral file numbers 29CK-C2 and 29CK-D7, *Ancestral File*, version 4.19 (1999), Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City, Utah. This source incorrectly connects the line of Francis Melvin Martin to John and Susan Martin. There was no such connection. I note it to alert other researchers.

days,”<sup>68</sup> <sup>69</sup> two months shy of 80, in the year that Alexander Graham Bell invented the telephone. His grave is not marked, but is surely in the Martin Family Cemetery with the graves of his wife and father.

In 1829 Rossini’s William Tell opera opened in Paris; the first steam locomotive began service in Pennsylvania; Barnum’s circus displayed the “Siamese twins”; and at age 32, John and 25-year-old Susan were married 13 January in Fauquier County,<sup>70</sup> <sup>71</sup> by Rev. John Ogilvie, pastor of Upper Goose Creek Baptist Church.<sup>72</sup> <sup>73</sup>

---

<sup>67</sup> John Richard Martin obituary, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper, in collection of John K. Gott, Fauquier Heritage and Preservation Foundation, Marshall, Virginia. He is referred to as the son of “Honest” John Martin. He is also so referred in his son Josh’s obituary cited in Chapter 10.

<sup>68</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible. Also *Alexandria Gazette*, 31 July, 1876. His death was not listed in the Elias Martin Family Bible. The last entry in the Elias Martin bible was dated 1874.

<sup>69</sup> Fauquier County Will Book 35: 403.

<sup>70</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 4: 10, Clerk of the Court’s Office, Warrenton, Virginia. Return of marriages by Revd. John Ogilvie 24 August 1829. A list of the marriages solemnized in the County of Fauquier. Ages and names of parents not recorded. No middle name was given for either of them. Her father Thomas Fisher was bondsman. This was the minister’s report of who he married. The date of the marriage is recorded as 12 January. Book 4:279 records the actual bond. Its date is also 12 January. However both the Elias Martin Family Bible and the John Richard Martin Family bible say the date was 13 January.

<sup>71</sup> Confirming the information in the Martin Family Bible, we know we have the right marriage because the death record of their son John Richard Martin identified Susan Fisher as his mother. See chapter on John Richard Martin.

<sup>72</sup> John S. Moore, *A History of Broad Run Baptist Church, S. B. C. 1762-1987* (no place: privately printed, 1987), 53. It is one of the two oldest Baptist churches in Virginia. See this reference for a history of the church and its ministers, several of whom were involved in the marriages of subjects in this book; Cumberland George, H. H. Wyer and John Ogilvie all have extensive biographies in the reference. John Ogilvie was ordained in 1824 and became a pastor of Goose Creek Baptist (now

<sup>74</sup> <sup>75</sup> Thirty-two was perhaps a little late for a man to marry, but there is no evidence of a first wife.

John Ogilvie reports that he married John's sister Mildred to Lewis Shumate on the same day, 12 January. However, the Martin Family Bible lists 15 January for Mildred and 13 January for John, two days apart. The bible is not available for examination, only a transcription. It is possible that this contained errors from difficult-to-read writing. I wonder if the families would incur the logistical burden of two weddings just two days apart. One wants to believe Rev. Ogilvie's date.

Susan was born 10 March 1803 and died 9 August 1879<sup>76</sup> at age 76, three years after her husband.<sup>77</sup> She is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery.

---

Pleasant Vale Baptist) Church in Fauquier County. He cared for four churches each of which he would visit once a month. He later was pastor of Broad Run Baptist church from 1841 to 1849.

<sup>73</sup> Helen Jeffries Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County 1840-1919* (San Antonio, Texas: Phil Bate Associates, 1989): "Brief History and Complete Minutes of the Broad Run Baptist Church, 1762-1872," part nine, 284.

<sup>74</sup> [Anonymous], "Pleasant Vale Baptist Church: Two Hundred Years of History 1799-1999," *Fauquier Heritage Society News*, volume 6, number 4 (July 1999): 1-5. "Pleasant Vale Baptist Church, according to the original records was organized on 24 November 1799, as Upper Goose Creek Baptist Church. The name ... was used to distinguish this body from a church organized in 1775 near the same stream near Upperville. The church ... moved into the village of Upperville in 1819 and took the name Upperville Baptist Church ... The minute book (a copy of which is in the archives of the Fauquier Heritage Society) reveals that the famous Elder John Ogilvie was called to the pastorate on July 15, 1826 and continued as a pastor until his death in 1849 ... After the death of John Ogilvie ... the church called Elder Barnett Grimsley to the pastorate." This reference has an extended history of Pleasant Vale Baptist Church.

<sup>75</sup> John Gott, "Carter's Run Baptist Church 1768-1962, Part I," *Fauquier Heritage and Preservation News*, Vol. 7 No. 1, (October, 1999) . See this reference for Ogilvie's service with Carter's Run Baptist Church.

## ***The Children of John and Susan***

John and Susan had nine children, seven of whom survived infancy, including three Black Horse Cavalrymen. In order of birth they were:

1. **William Thomas Martin.** He was born 8 February 1830.<sup>78</sup> He was named for his mother's father, William Thomas Fisher. He is shown in his father's household in the 1850 census at age 20.<sup>79</sup> He may have predeceased his father since he was not mentioned in his will. Since, unlike his three brothers, he was not a member of the Black Horse Cavalry, he probably died or moved away before 1861. No will or **land record [check titheables, personal property tax records.]** was found for William Thomas in Fauquier records. He is the only one of his siblings for whom we do not have a death date.<sup>80</sup> We know nothing else about him. [Look in 1860 census.]

---

<sup>76</sup> Susan A. Martin tombstone, Martin Family Cemetery, Fauquier County, Virginia. Also Elias Martin Family Bible and John Richard Martin Family Bible.

<sup>77</sup> Neither John nor Susan Martin is recorded in Fauquier County death records. Nor is their son Robert or his wife Mary. This is surprising since John's will was probated in 1876 and his death noted by the clerk of the court. Even though he had no will, surely the county noted the death of such a famous soldier when Robert was accidentally killed after the war.

<sup>78</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible. Elias Martin Family Bible.

<sup>79</sup> John Martin household, 1850 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia, Ashby District, dwelling 842, family 859, National Archives Micropublication, roll 943, page 257. The census data for 1850 was as of October 10.

<sup>80</sup> Neither Martin bible has his death date.

2. Black Horse Cavalryman **Robert Edward “Bob” Martin**, who received a rifle as “the bravest man in Lee’s army.” He was born 15 August 1831. He married his neighbor Mary Virginia Childs. He died accidentally at age 39.
3. **Mary Frances Martin**. She was born 3 April 1833 and died in infancy 5 August 1834. She was named for her mother’s mother, Mary Frances Gordon.
4. **Elias F. Martin**. He was born 16 December 1834<sup>81</sup> and died in infancy, 20 Dec. 1835<sup>82</sup> He was named for his grandfather, Elias Martin.
5. **Margaret Ann Martin**. She was born 4 September 1836. She married her neighbor, Black Horse cavalryman James H. [ask Alice Jane about middle initial.] Childs, and brother of Mary Virginia Childs. She died at the young age of 37.
6. **Mildred Lee “Minnie” Martin**. She was born 31 October 1838. [need her death certificate too], She never married. She is probably named after her father’s sister, Mildred Waggoner Martin. She was 81 when she died in 1919.
7. **Susan Elizabeth “Bettie” Martin**. She was born 9 July 1841, twin to John Richard. She married Black Horse cavalryman William A. Bowen, Jr. She is probably named after her mother Susan A. Fisher. She died in 1933, aged 91,

---

<sup>81</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible is only source for his middle initial.. This sources says born 16 December. Elias Martin Family bible records his birthday as 15 December.

<sup>82</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible. The Elias Martin Family Bible records 13 January 1836.

and 136 years after the birth of her father. She was the last to die of her siblings.

8. Black Horse Cavalryman **John Richard “Dick” Martin**. He was born 9 July 1841, twin to Susan Elizabeth. He married Jemima Gilmore, then Mary Gregory. He died at age 74.
9. Black Horse Cavalryman **George Washington**<sup>83</sup> **“Josh” Martin**. He was born 2 February 1844.<sup>84</sup> He never married. He is named for his father’s brother George Washington Martin. He lived only to age 52.

These children were born over a fourteen-year period from 1830 to 1844. Susan Martin would have been 26 at the first birth and almost 41 at the last. This is a wide span of years, but not uncommon then.

The chapters that follow will sketch the children who survived except William Thomas.

## ***The 1850 Census***

The 1850 Census shows the family in Fauquier.<sup>85</sup> In the census index, John’s name was recorded as Marton instead of Martin. The census information is

---

<sup>83</sup>Martin, “John Martin-Susan A. Fisher family group sheet” *Ancestral File*. His middle name comes from this ancestral file.

<sup>84</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible. The Elias Martin Family Bible records only the month February, no day.

<sup>85</sup> 1850 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia, roll 943, p. 257.

supposed to be as of October 10, 1850. This is the last trace of William Thomas Martin.

859	Jno Martin	49	M	W	Warrenton	4570	"	
	Susan do	48	F	W			"	
	William do	20	M	W			"	
	Robert do	18	M	W			"	
	Mary Ann do	14	F	W			"	u,
	Melono do	11	F	W			"	u,
	Jno do	9	M	W			"	u,
	Susan do	9	F	W			"	u,
	Georg do	7	M	W			"	

### **Honest John Martin During the War**

One of the members of the Black Horse was Fauquier's Alexander Hunter. In his book *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*, he described the Martin family thus:

In small squads, traveling by unfrequented roads, the Black Horse made their way into Fauquier without being discovered. Scattering through the country among families and friends, each man was cautioned to be ready at any moment, day or night, to obey any summons from their officers. Horses were kept in the depths of the woods, as stables were considered too dangerous in those times.

I was billeted for Mr. Martin's, the home of the celebrated Martins, of the Black Horse. This snug little home, sitting back from the main road, some six miles north<sup>86</sup> of Warrenton, furnished three soldiers whose skill and gallantry made their name a

---

<sup>86</sup> Hunter erred. He meant six miles south.

household word among the cavalry corps....The father, old Mr. John Martin,<sup>87</sup> was, taking him all in all, one of the noblest types of manhood I ever met; I never expect to look upon his like again. A nature so true, so noble, so honest that he impressed all who met him as being a man of strong individuality. By those who knew him intimately he was admired for his grandeur of character and loved for his big, generous heart. He was my ideal of a patriot, and when with him I always thought of Cincinnatus, the noblest Roman of them all.

Mr. Martin loved his State and the cause she had espoused with all the might of his strong nature, and with a singleness of purpose which is rarely met with; he had no thought which was not connected with the welfare of his State. He was a large landed proprietor, the possessor of two spacious farms lying near Warrenton Junction. At the outbreak of the war he was a man of means and owed no man a dollar. When the tide of conflict surged to his doors he threw them wide open and gave everything he had to the soldiers and held absolutely nothing back.

His house was the rendezvous for all the Black Horsemen in the vicinity. Any straying scout applying for shelter was naturally directed to the Martins; their house was always full; thousands and thousands of soldiers were fed there during the four years of warfare, nor was there a straggling Northern soldier turned from his door.

He had a stout heart, that old white-haired gentleman, standing calmly by and watching the destruction of his crops, the capturing of his stock, the dismantling or

---

<sup>87</sup> John Martin was sixty-four when the war began.

burning of his fences, stables and barns and the general pillaging of his estates by his foes, without a murmur. He seemed endowed with a sublime philosophy. He commenced life as a poor man and had slowly and patiently, in a half-century of incessant toil, made himself and family comfortable, and now with the calmness of a Stoic he stood by and saw the labors of a long life destroyed.

He made no threat, no complaint, nor indulged in any repinings. He was the type of many Virginia planters and farmers too old to shoulder a musket. He was proud of his three sons, and they revered the 'old Man.' Nothing pleased Mr. Martin so much as to get his house filled with the 'Cracks' of the Black Horse and listen to their tales of 'Derring Do'.<sup>88</sup>

In his son Josh's obituary, the writer noted:

Courage, truth and honesty was an inheritance from the best of fathers known to all of his associates as "HONEST John martin" and no man in any age more richly deserved that sobriquet.<sup>89</sup>

## ***After the War***

The war had ended and Confederate soldiers headed home. In Fauquier they found a devastated county. "Because there was not a stand within three miles of town, in December, 1865, wood sold for five dollars a cord in Warrenton.

---

<sup>88</sup> Alexander Hunter, *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank* (The Neal Publishing Company; New York and Washington, 1905), 666-669. Almost one half of this book is devoted to Hunter's experiences while a member of the Black Horse Cavalry. He discussed the Martin brothers in detail.

<sup>89</sup> George W. Martin obituary, *The Warrenton True Index*, Warrenton, Virginia, 29 February 1896, page 4, column 3.

On October 23<sup>rd</sup> [1865] presiding county court justice William H. Gaines penned the following words to none other than “His Excellency, the Hon. Andrew Johnson, President of the United States. Four years of war have so impoverished the people of this County, that much suffering for the necessaries of life has occurred, and that much more must occur the coming winter, that the crops of 1862, 63 & 64 were generally used or destroyed by the passing armies, that the crops of the present year are very inadequate to the wants of the people, that the live sock has nearly disappeared, and that there is no prospect for amelioration in the condition of the people before the end of the next year. In the midst of such destitution with many dwelling houses and farm buildings destroyed or in ruins, with more than half the arable land of the County turned into common for want of fences, and no adequate force of horsed, oxen & labor, to cultivate the enclosed land, the tax gatherer has appeared amongst us, demanding ...twenty seven cents upon each one hundred dollars of land of the valuation of 1860-which in the aggregate amounts to a very large sum of money, greatly more than is believed to be possessed by the entire population of the County.”<sup>90</sup>

Lt. William McNulty was the agent for the Freedmen’s Bureau in Warrenton. On 10 February 1865 he had John Martin arrested. Martin had gotten into a fight with a Negro who was hunting on his property. “The arbitrary arrest shocked locals, and

---

<sup>90</sup> Eugene M. Scheel, *The Civil War in Fauquier* (Warrenton, Virginia: The Fauquier Bank, 1985), 88.

was exacerbated by Martin's returning from a few days' detention in Richmond a sick man."<sup>91</sup>

Martin marriages came quickly after the war. Three of his children married in 1866, 1868 and 1869.

Five years after the war, the 1870 U. S. Census found John Martin as a farmer, age 73 with his wife Susan, age 66, keeping house. Children at home included Mildred, 30, George W., 24, Robert E., 37 and Robert's wife Mary V. [Childs], 33.<sup>92</sup> His real estate was valued at \$6,500 and his personal property at \$900.

[Check value at 1860 census.]

He put all that he had at risk to support the Black Horse. When John Martin died in 1876, he divided his property between his wife and children. He and his wife died in much reduced circumstances, the war taking a heavy toll as **Hunter** noted.

### ***The Martin Farms***

Where did they live? John Martin owned two farms near the Casanova section of Fauquier County. The largest, at **Godfrey's** Corner, was 405 acres. He called this

---

<sup>91</sup> Eugene M. Scheel, *The Civil War in Fauquier*, 89.

<sup>92</sup> John Martin household, 1870 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia; **household, etc.**, roll 1145, page 492. They lived in the First Revenue District. The census data for 1870 was as of June 1. They were all listed as born in Virginia

tract his “Home” farm.<sup>93</sup> His other farm, about two miles away and of about 352 acres, he called his “Licking Run” farm.<sup>94</sup> Both farms were near the old Germantown Settlement along Licking Run. Each was about two miles from lot 11 at Germantown.



**The John and Susan Martin residence at the “Home Farm”, 1898.**

He divided these farms among his children at his death. The lot owned by John Richard Martin, part of the Licking Run Farm, with the family cemetery stayed intact for over 115 years. Only in the late 1990s was it partially subdivided into

---

<sup>93</sup> The Home Farm occupied the S. E. and S. W. corners of the intersection of the modern day Meetze Road (Rt.643, old name, Fredericksburg-Warrenton Rd.) and Beach Road (Rt.616, old name Shumates Mill Road), at “Godfrey’s Corner.”  
(Coordinates: 38° 39’ 8.5 N , 77° 44’ 21 W.)

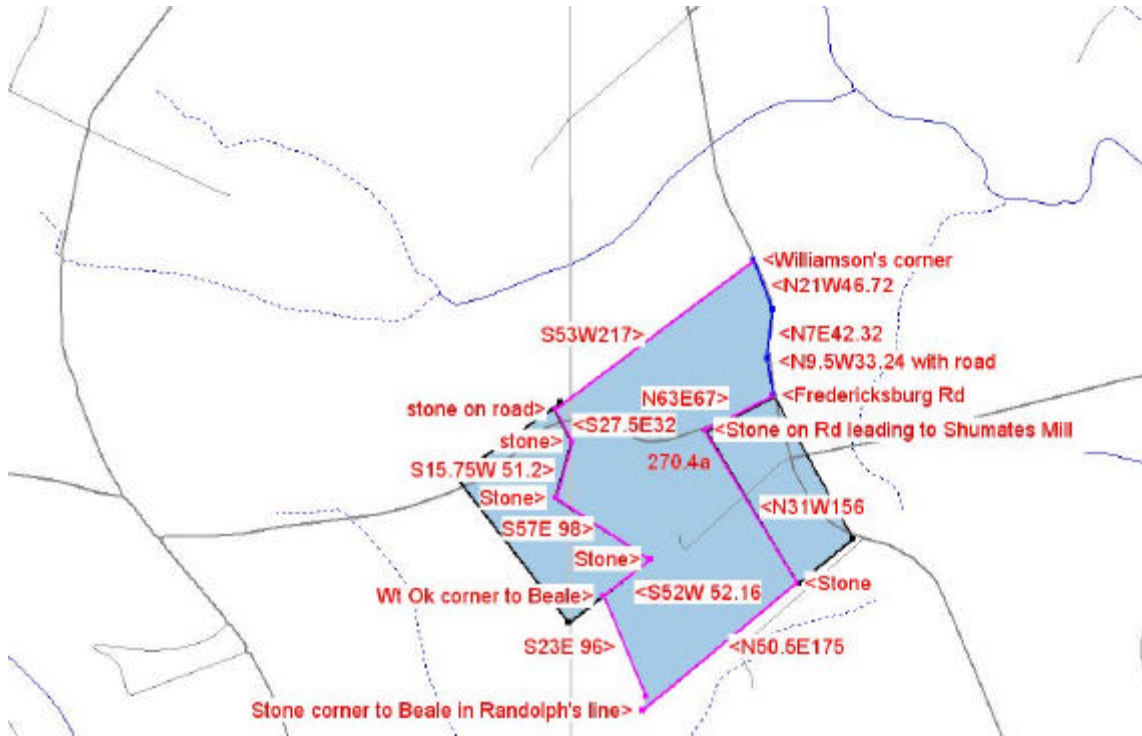
<sup>94</sup> The Licking Run Farm was located about 2.5 miles away on Licking Run where the Martin Family Cemetery is located.

residential lots. About 75 acres of the original 100 acres is intact and contains the Martin family cemetery.<sup>95</sup>

---

<sup>95</sup> Danny and Bonny Scott own the land in 2002. See Fauquier County Tax Map, PIN number 6991-13-2173-000. 74 acres, transferred by Fauquier County deed 775: 1569 and plat recorded in deed 775: 1571, March 23, 1997. The previous owner was Chase Manhattan Mortgage Corp. who received the property from Greg Britto, Trustee in deed 749: 572, December 20, 1995. All deeds in the chain of title note the reservation of the cemetery.

Figure of Land deed plots.



When John Richard Martin sold the land out of the family, the cemetery was reserved for the exclusive use of Martin family descendants.<sup>96</sup>

### ***The Martin Family Cemetery***

Only financial hardship would have kept this ordinarily affluent family from marking the graves with tombstones. Although he is surely buried there, no tombstone has been found for Honest John Martin. His wife Susan has only a modest field stone marker, and his famous son Robert E. Martin has only a small, low, rude stone with "R. E. M" chiseled roughly on its face. His father Elias Martin has a similar stone.

In summary, we know the following Martins are buried there (the source is in parentheses):

- Elias Martin, Honest John's father (marker.)
- Susan Fisher Martin, Honest John's wife, (marker.)

Also the following children of Honest John and Susan Fisher Martin:

- Robert Edward Martin (marker.)
- John Richard Martin (obituary.)
- George Washington Martin (marker.)
- Mildred Lee Martin (obituary.)

---

<sup>96</sup> Fauquier County Deeds, 69: 170. John Richard Martin reserves the one-half acre cemetery from the sale.

There is a marker inscribed M. F. M., born April 1868, died November 20, 1882.<sup>97</sup>

We do not know this child who died at age fourteen.

Susan Elizabeth Martin is buried in the Warrenton Cemetery. Her husband William A. Bowen, Jr. is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery.

Margaret Ann Martin is buried in the Childs Family Cemetery, in Casanova, along with her husband..

Thus, all the adult children are accounted for except for William Thomas Martin. The cemetery is overgrown and not maintained.

---

<sup>97</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:144. The marker's dates are not given in this reference.

**Insert Family Tree diagram**

**Insert Picture of Bob Martin's Gravestone: [Here or in Bob Martin Chapter?] or**

**photo of Susan's grave.**



Alexandria, Va.

MONDAY, JULY 31, 1876

FAUQUIER COUNTY ITEMS. — The Warrenton Index says:

Belleview, the country seat of Gen. L. L. Lowax, has been purchased by Marshall Poynter for \$9,000.

The Marsh tract, near Bealton, has been sold for \$8 per acre.

Willis Robison, colored, indicted for shooting a valuable horse belonging to Charles Gordon, esq., and attempted assassination of Mark Coleman, has been sentenced to the penitentiary for three years.

John Martin died at his farm in lower Fauquier on the 25th inst.



## 5

### **Robert Edward “Bob” Martin**

The second child of Honest John and Susan Martin, Robert Edward Martin, the “bravest man in Lee’s army”, was born 15 August 1831 and, at age 39, died 30 January 1871,<sup>98</sup> four months after the birth of his daughter and two years after his marriage. Bob is buried next to his brother Josh Martin in the Martin family cemetery. His grave is a small, rough stone marked only “R. E. M.”

#### ***His Accidental Death***

Ironically, after surviving a terrible war, he was killed accidentally.<sup>99</sup> A sleigh he was driving, near Ajax, the home of his wife’s family, was overturned by a runaway

---

<sup>98</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible; give birth and death dates. This is the only source found for his death date.

<sup>99</sup> J. K. Taliaferro, “How Lieutenant Meigs Came To His Death,” *Confederate Veteran*, 22:128; This reference discusses the Martin family, and the Meigs incident involving Richard Martin. It mentions that Robert E. Martin “died a few years after the war.”

horse.<sup>100</sup> “His brains were dashed out on a rock.”<sup>101</sup> [Check which reference mentions horse.] [Also check mention in Confederate Veterans Magazine.]

We even know exactly where the accident occurred. Randy Carter recorded the following in his diary<sup>102</sup> in 1952:

Bob Martin's ghost? When I was 16 [1920] I was coming back from Warrenton to Melrose<sup>103</sup> where we were



ROBERT MARTIN.  
By an English Nobleman presented with  
rifle as the bravest man in the  
Confederate Army.

---

<sup>100</sup> Interview, Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs, (Mrs. Ernest Lee Childs, Jr., 5272 Casanova Road; Casanova, VA 22017), by Lynn Hopewell, July 11, 1999. Her husband, Earnest Lee Childs, Jr. is Honest John Martin's great-grandson.

<sup>101</sup> Interview with Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright (Mrs. Roy A. Wright, 1002 W. Lafayette Ave., Jacksonville, IL 62650-1861), by Lynn Hopewell, 2 December, 2000. As told to her by her mother.

<sup>102</sup> “Journal of Randolph Hicks Carter,” (MS, 19??-19??; Warrenton, Virginia), [page]. Owned 2002 by his son Randolph Scott E. Carter; 5338 Balls Mill Road; Midland, VA 22728.

<sup>103</sup> Melrose Castle is on the National Register of Historic Places and is located on Rt. 602 in Casanova Virginia. It dates from around 1854 and is situated on a fifty acre parcel of land. It was built by the Murray family who named it Melrose after their homeland in Scotland. During the War Between the States, the castle was occupied by forces of both the North and South

spending the summer. I was horseback on "Daughter", a wonderful saddle horse, it was near midnight, as we entered the deep cut in the road on the Melrose side of Turkey Run<sup>104</sup> my horse stopped dead and refused to go thru the cut. No amount of kicking or beating would make her go a step further- It was too dark for me to see anything, and I wasn't going to get off.

While wondering what to do my horse started trembling violently- it was contagious and I became terrified- at what I do not know. I turned her around out of the cut and thru the woods, scared to death. Last year- thirty years later- I learned that it was here that Bob Martin's horse had run away, and he fell from his cart and was killed. Does this explain the fright experienced by my horse and then by me?

That was 32 years ago to be exact.

### ***His Marriage to Mary Childs***

Four years after the war, the Rev. Henry H. Wyer,<sup>105</sup> married Bob Martin and Mary Virginia Childs, 14 December 1869. He was 37 and she was 26.<sup>106 107</sup>

---

<sup>104</sup> Bob Martin's accident took place on the modern-day Old Carolina Road (Rt. 602) (also known as Rogues Road) where it crosses Turkey Run, one mile from the intersection of Old Carolina Road and Weston Road (Rt. 734). The spot is 100 yards South of the modern-day intersection of Old Carolina Road and Spring Hill Lane. "Coordinates: 38° 40' 18.2" N, 77° 42' 49.3" W. The spot is also about 3/4 mile from his wife's parent's farm, Ajax. The part of Ajax containing the cemetery is now owned by Edward P. Evans and renamed "Spring Hill."

<sup>105</sup> Kitsch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County 1840-1919*, 252. The Rev. Henry H. Wyer became pastor of the Broad Run Baptist Church, in May 1871. His arrival is noted in the minutes of the church. Also see Moore, *A History of Broad Run Baptist Church, S.B.C., 1762-1987*, 53.

The 1870 U.S. Census showed him and his new wife Mary living at his father's home.<sup>108</sup> They had one daughter, Annie Robert<sup>109</sup> Martin, born 10 November 1870.<sup>110</sup> She died young, 2 October 1874.<sup>111</sup> She is probably buried in the Martin or Childs Family Cemetery.

### ***His Black Horse Service***

Alexander Hunter described him<sup>112</sup>:

...Robert...was the orderly sergeant of the Black Horse, and he was to the enemy's scouts a rankling thorn. "No man ever lived, better fitted to back a friend or face a foe; he was the beau ideal of a cavalryman; tall, athletic, muscular, with pluck written in every line of his strongly marked face.

---

<sup>106</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 7: 90. Both were born in Fauquier County. He was a farmer. His parents were John and Susan Martin. Her father is listed as Thomas Childs. This is an error. Her obituary correctly identifies her father as William. The space in the record for the first name of her mother is blank. Henry H. Wyer married them.

<sup>107</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible.

<sup>108</sup> 1870 U.S. census, Fauquier County, Virginia, roll 1145, page 492.

<sup>109</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible, gives middle name.

<sup>110</sup> Annie R. Martin entry, Fauquier County Births: 96, line 40. Born near 3 Mile Station, parents Robert E. and Mary B. Martin. He was a farmer, reported by John Martin (her grandfather). The B. in Mary's name should be a V.

<sup>111</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible; gives birth and death date. She is not listed in Fauquier County death records.

<sup>112</sup> Hunter, *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*, 664.

He had certainly captured more of the enemy's cavalry than any other man in the army. He had just received a superb rifle sent by an English nobleman to be presented to the bravest man in Lee's army.

Of course it was impossible among so many of the bravest soldiers on earth to choose one preeminently daring. Lieutenant Minor<sup>113</sup> of the C.S. Navy, who was charged with the mission, forwarded the weapon to Colonel Randolph<sup>114</sup> with instructions.

After a good deal of inquiry the Colonel presented the English heavy-bore to Sergeant Martin as the man who had committed the most daring deeds.<sup>115</sup> This decision caused no heart-burning in the Black Horse, as Bob Martin was the acknowledged leader in all enterprises which savored of fearful risk or dangerous undertaking.

---

<sup>113</sup> CSS Virginia web site, <<http://cssvirginia.org>>, accessed 5 May 2002. WDC GenWeb - Descendants of Dodoes Minor, <<http://www.rootsweb.com/~deschart/z0000127.html>>, accessed 5 May 2002. Robert Dabney Minor was the son of Garrett Minor II and his wife Eliza McWilliams. Robert was born 13 September 1827 and died 25 November 1871 in Richmond. He was a 1841 graduate of the U. S. Naval Academy and a distinguished U. S and Confederate Naval officer. On 17 December 1850 he married Landonia Randolph who was born 24 March 1830, and who was the sister of Col. Robert Randolph. Flag Lieutenant on the CSS Virginia in its engagement with the USS Monitor, March 8, 1862, Minor was severely wounded attempting to fire the *Congress*. Had five children: Mollie, Donie, Annie, Bessie C., Roberta. See the Robert D. Minor Letters, 1862-1863, Accession 20194, Personal papers collection, The Library of Virginia. Archives Branch, Richmond, Virginia 232219.

<sup>114</sup> Robert Randolph was the son of Charles and Mary Mortimer Randolph, of "The Grove" in Fauquier County, an estate on Meetz Road near Casanova, now owned by Randolph Scott E. Carter. Randolph had previously commanded the Black Horse. His father was Gen. Robert E. Lee's first cousin. Col. Randolph is buried at "Eastern View," also on Meetz Road.

<sup>115</sup> The rifle is in the hands of a Warrenton family. The author has examined it.

Speaking of Martin, his former captain, John Scott, put it this way:

... He appeared to court danger for itself, and it seemed there was nothing he so little valued as life. To him, by general consent, therefore, the rifle was awarded as “the bravest of the brave.”<sup>116</sup>

In an April 20, 1863 letter to his wife, Warrenton editor Lycurgus Washington Caldwell remarked;

“I was pleased to learn of the compliment [receiving the rifle,] paid to Robert Martin, he is a very deserving young man and a splendid soldier.”<sup>117</sup>

### *The Bravest Man in Lee's Army*

The Lieutenant referred to by Hunter above was Robert Dabney Minor, a U. S. Naval Academy graduate, and former Lieutenant In the U.S. Navy. He served on the *Merrimack*<sup>118</sup> (**CSS Virginia**) in its famous fight with the USS *Monitor*, the first battle between ironclad warships, in Hampton Roads.

In September, 1863, an expedition was established to free Confederate prisoners of war at Johnson's Island, in Lake Erie, near Sandusky Ohio. The party was commanded by Captain John Wilkinson who was captain of the *R. E. Lee*, one of the

---

<sup>116</sup> Scott, “The Black Horse Cavalry,” 595.

<sup>117</sup> J. Michael Welton, Editor; “*My Heart Is So Rebellious*,” *The Caldwell Letters, 1861-1865*. (Warrenton, Virginia: privately printed, 1991), 217.

most famous of all blockade runners. Lt. Minor was his second-in-command.<sup>119</sup> The expedition was a cloak-and-dagger affair. They sailed for Halifax, Nova Scotia on October 10, 1863. The party got as far as Toronto, when the plot was discovered. The party returned home.<sup>120</sup>

It was while in Nova Scotia that Lt. Minor received the rifle. Several months after his return, he forwarded it to Colonel Robert Randolph with the following instructions.

NAVAL ORDNANCE WORKS

Richmond, Virginia, January 30, 1864

Lieut. Col. Robert Randolph,  
Commanding 4<sup>th</sup> Virginia Cavalry:

Colonel: - While recently abroad, a rifle of peculiar make and exquisite finish was placed in my hands as a present from an English gentlemen, to any one who would make the best use of it against our enemies - or, to use his own words, - "to any one

---

<sup>118</sup> *The Confederate Military History*, Volume 12, p. [REDACTED]. On March 9, 1862 the Merrimack engaged the U. S. S. *Monitor* in Hampton Roads. The Merrimack was a Union warship captured by the Confederates and renamed the C. S. S. *Virginia*. In his after action report, Flag Officer Franklin Buchanan commended the bravery of Lt. Minor.

<sup>119</sup> Robert D. Minor, "The Plan to Rescue the Johnson's Island Prisoners", *Southern Historical Society Papers*, Volume XXIII (January-December 1895): 283- 290. Minor gives an extended account of the expedition.

<sup>120</sup> Charles A. Earp, "Father John B. Tabb, an unreconstructed Rebel to the end, had served the Confederacy aboard blockade runners," *America's Civil War*, online, <[http://columbiad.com/americascivilwar/articles/01962\\_text.htm](http://columbiad.com/americascivilwar/articles/01962_text.htm)>. Accessed 2 May 2002

who will kill a Yankee with it". As the Black Horse company has deservedly won a world wide reputation, I beg leave to place it in your hands, to be presented to the bravest man in that troop.

I am, sir, respectfully yours, &c.,

R. D. Minor, Lieutenant C. S. Navy

Col. Randolph was no doubt pleased to hear from Lt. Minor, particularly since Randolph was a former captain of the Black Horse, before he was promoted and transferred to the 4<sup>th</sup> Virginia. Col. Randolph replied:

HDQ'S 4<sup>TH</sup> VIRGINIA CAVALRY

Fauquier County, Feb. 12, 1864.

Lieut. Robert D. Minor, C. S. N.

Lieutenant, -I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of a beautiful rifle and your letter, requesting me to present it to the bravest man in my old company. For some time I hesitated as to who should be the recipient among so many deserving men. First Sergeant Robert Martin and private Alston, a countryman of the donor present equal claims; both "will kill a Yankee with it" and both have killed many before. First Sergeant Martin has served three years and private Alston, not quite one year. Because of longer service only, I present it to First Sergeant Robert Martin, a man who, in the past three years, has doubtless killed more Yankees than any other in that troop, and is surpassed by none in courage and daring.

With a high appreciation of your allusion to the Black Horse company, and a God-speed to that pro-rebel Englishman, I am, Lieutenant, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

Robert Randolph,

Lieut. Colonel commanding,

4<sup>th</sup> Virginia Cavalry

Lt. Minor's daughter Landonia Randolph Minor Dashiell, in a note dated 22 August 1924, pointed out that "The allusion above to "recently abroad" in my father's letter could not be explained at the time. He had returned in Nov. 1863 from the famous Johnston Island Expedition and while in Canada, rather Nova Scotia, had met the Englishman who presented the rifle. The above letters appeared both in the Sentinel and the Richmond Wig at the time the rifle was awarded. I have copied them from my father's confederate Scrap-Book."<sup>121</sup>

According to Lt. Minor's letter, Englishman did not exactly say that the rifle should go to the "bravest" man, but to him that would make best use of it in killing Yankees. Lt. Minor reasonably translated the request into presenting the rifle to the bravest man. As Hunter noted, selecting the Black Horse as the company from which the "bravest man" would be selected was arbitrary in an army full of brave

---

<sup>121</sup> Minor papers, Museum of the Confederacy. [Get more detailed citation. Ask lee Shepard, VHS.]

men. Lt. Minor justified his selection by noting the fame which the Black Horse enjoyed. Nevertheless, the award was certainly intended to be representational.

Why did Lt. Minor select Col. Randolph and the Black Horse? Most likely not only because of the fame of the Black Horse, but because Col. Randolph was his brother-in-law. Minor married Randolph's sister, Landonia. Randolph also knew Bob Martin well as they were neighbors. Randolph's home, The Grove, was an estate only about a mile east along Meetz Road from the Martin Home Farm.

{Insert photo of rifle.}

### *Sparticus*

Providing more evidence of Bob Martin's bravery, Alexander Hunter continued further:

Bob Martin ought to have lived in the days of the Crusades. He would have made an ideal Sparticus, or a Jack Cade, for he was a born gladiator: six feet one inch in height, weighing about 180 pounds, with not an ounce of superfluous flesh, it was no wonder he was the acknowledged leader among the daring men of the Black Horse.

In personal strength he was a phenomenon, and he was as quick and active as a panther. He had a good, honest countenance; his eyes were gray, and his firm mouth and chin showed the character of the man. In action he had the sternest face I ever saw, and his eyes had within them a baleful glitter that was terrifying. As a partisan he was at his best.

In the autumn of 1862, when riding along an obscure road in Fauquier County, he encountered six of the enemy, and in the fight that ensued he wounded two and captured two and came out unscathed. His deeds would fill pages.

On one occasion, in 1863, he visited his home and found there two of his comrades of the Black Horse. Despite his better judgment, Sergeant Martin remained with them in the house all night. That evening a Negro servant of the Martin household slipped over to Casanova, about a mile distant, and informed the Federal General Torbett of the prize within easy grasp.

Just after midnight the house was surrounded by a battalion of Yankee cavalry, and the officer, going to the door, summoned all the inmates to appear. Two of the Rebs gave themselves up, but Bob Martin, with a pistol in each hand, sprang through a window right in the midst of his enemies, and there was some lively shooting, but he got away unharmed.

He was not only fearless, but his nerve never failed, and in moments of deadliest peril he kept his wits about him; his mind and body moved in unison, with the quickness of the lightning's flash, and it was this intuitive action that saved him time and time again.

A man madly, blindly brave, placed in position of deadly menace and peril where Martin escaped, would have met death many times. It was not Bob's luck, but his doing the right thing at the right time that saved him. He was the only trooper in the Black Horse who, when in close quarter, preferred the saber to the pistol; and come to think of it, I never met or heard of any cavalryman except the German Colonel von Borcke, Stuart's personal friend, who did.

In the charge at Brandy Station, in June, 1864, Sergeant Martin rode a couple of lengths in advance, and literally hewed his way with his saber through the opposing force. It was for a time a surging, intermingled mass of men, who feared to use their pistols unless the muzzles were jammed against the enemy's body, and it was in that mob that Bob Martin so distinguished himself that his deeds were talked of around every camp-fire in the cavalry.



Robert Edward Martin

Withal, there was not a touch of the desperado about Bob Martin. Outside of battle he was a reserved, quiet man, unobtrusive and reticent; he was obliging and wholly generous, and he inherited from his father his honesty and pride.

Bob Martin by all laws, should have been the captain of the Black Horse, and every trooper, had he been privileged, would have voted him that honor. That such a born soldier should have gone through the war in the ranks is but one of the numberless cases of the incompetency of the Confederate Government.<sup>122</sup>

---

<sup>122</sup> Hunter, *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*, 666.

## **Mary Virginia Childs Martin, his Wife**

Bob Martin's wife Mary Virginia Childs Martin lived over forty years with the memory of her husband. She died February 4, 1912.<sup>123</sup> [get death certificate.] Her obituary, below, says she was 81, making her birth in 1831. However, in the 1870 U. S. Census, her age is given as 33 making her birth in 1837. [Check 1850 census.] She is buried in the Childs Family Cemetery. [get photo of all tombstones in cem.]

The following is her obituary:

Mrs. Mary Childs Martin departed this life at the home of her nephew, Mr. E. L. Childs, Casanova, on Sunday, the 4th inst. [February 4, 1912], aged 81 years. She was the youngest child of Wm. Childs, a native of Culpeper County, and Ann Lewis, of Fauquier. Both families were prominent early English settlers of Virginia. Mrs. Martin's husband was a member of the distinguished Black Horse company, and a gallant soldier of the confederacy. He was accidentally killed a few years after the close of the Civil War.

---

<sup>123</sup> Family data, James H. Childs Family Bible. *The Holy Bible Containing the New Testament*, Holman's Edition, (Philadelphia: A. J. Holman and Co., 1873); original owned by in 1999 by Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. (5272 Casanova Road, Casanova, VA 22017). This bible passed from James H. Childs to his son Ernest Lee Childs to his grandson Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. There is no record of her death in Fauquier County Death records.

This subject was in every way a superior woman, of good presence, sensible and generous, kindly, hospitable and with all a consistent Christian. She was a member of the Broad Run Baptist Church, [check church records for 1912] on the books of which her mother, brother, and sister have stood enrolled four scores of years. Few people have done more in an unostentatious way than she, and none have higher praise from those who were privileged to know her.

Many relations in this and other states will be saddened by the news of her death, yet it is their blessed privilege to mourn not as those without hope.

She was buried at Ajax, the home of her father, on Tuesday, the 6th inst., by her friends and neighbors; her pastor,

Rev. V. H. Council, conducting the services. \*Editor's Note: A faint pencil line is drawn through Culpeper County, so there is a question as to whether or not this was where Mr. Childs was from originally. <sup>124</sup>

[see Strother child's footnote in Childs section. He from Culpeper. ]



Mary Virginia Childs Martin

---

<sup>124</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County 1840-1919*, 216. The obituary confirms the day of death, but makes no mention of the month or year.

See the chapter on the Childs family for more information on her family.

### ***Why Is Bob Martin Unknown Today?***

Why have most people never heard of Bob Martin? After all, lesser heroes have become much better known. The reason is because he died so soon after the war. Heroes thrive best in historical memory if they either die committing a courageous act, or live long enough after the war to receive the attention of middle-aged veterans revisiting the deeds of their youth.

Bob Martin survived the war, but died twenty years before the resurrection of the sentiment of the Lost Cause in the 1890s when veterans of both armies began to organize and hold reunions to recount and celebrate their glory days. Bob Martin, “the bravest man in Lee’s army,” lived too long and yet died too soon; he became lost in a historical never-never land.

**Insert Photo of his gravestone.**



## 6

# Margaret Ann Martin

Margaret Ann Martin was born 4 September 1836.<sup>125</sup> <sup>126</sup> and died age 37, 22 May 1874 in childbirth of her third child.<sup>127</sup> <sup>128</sup> Margaret and her brother Bob married a brother and sister. Margaret married James H. Childs and Bob married James' sister Mary Virginia Childs.

The Childs' farm was only about a mile north of the Martin "home" farm, thus the children grew up as neighbors. Margaret and James were married 20 December 1866.<sup>129</sup> <sup>130</sup> <sup>131</sup> He was 33 and she was 30. Margaret and her husband are both buried in the Childs Family Cemetery in Casanova.

---

<sup>125</sup> James H. Childs Family Bible. An entry gives her birth year as 1836, but nothing else.

<sup>126</sup> She would be born in 1838 based on her age in her marriage record.

<sup>127</sup> James H. Childs Family Bible. Margaret died in childbirth on the date of the birth of her son James.

<sup>128</sup> No record of her death is found in Fauquier County records.

<sup>129</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 17: 55. Date is December 20. He is listed as age 33 and she as age 28. Both were born in Fauquier County. His parents were John and Susan [Fisher] Martin. Hers were Wm. H. and Nancy M. Childs. The marriage was by John W. Pugh.

<sup>130</sup> James H. Childs Family Bible. The date here is also recorded as 20 December 1866.

## **James H. Childs**

James H. Childs was born 15 April 1833 and died 19 July 1878 at age 44.<sup>132 133</sup> He was the son of William H. Childs and Nancy Ann Lewis. (See Appendix 2 for details of his family.)

James H. Childs served in the Black Horse Cavalry along with his brother Francis A. Childs, and with his three famous Martin brothers-in-law. Military records mention that he was a 2nd sergeant, was captured and imprisoned at the notorious Union prison at Morris Island, South Carolina, and that he became blind while a prisoner.<sup>134 135</sup>

---

<sup>131</sup> Margaret A. Martin married Lt. Jas. H. Childs, True Index, Fauquier County, Virginia, 5 January 1876, 3.

<sup>132</sup> James H. Childs Family Bible. His birthday is noted in the bible.

<sup>133</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:40. No record of his death is found in Fauquier County death records. The Childs cemetery is located west of Casanova on the north side of route 616, on "Spring Hill," property now owned Edward P. Evans

<sup>134</sup> J. Ogden Murray, Maj., *The Immortal Six Hundred: A Story Of Cruelty To Confederate Prisoners Of War* (Winchester, Virginia, The Eddy Press Corp., 1905), 237.

<sup>135</sup> Martin F. Graham, "The Immortal 600: the Long Journey to Freedom," *The Civil War Quarterly* 10: 50

## ***The Early Death of Mother and Children***

Margaret Martin and James Childs had the following children who died tragically, according to family tradition, in an 1874 typhoid epidemic:<sup>136</sup>

John W. Childs, born 17 June 1869, died 5 October 1874, aged 5.

Ida May Childs, born 22 December 1871, died 8 December 1874, aged 3.

James H. Childs, Jr., born 22 May 1874, died 27 September 1874 aged 4 months.

They also had Ernest Lee Childs. Only he survived his siblings.

### *Ernest Lee Childs*

Ernest Lee Childs, was born 24 August 1870 and died 2 February 1954 at age 83. On 3 April 1912, he married Anna Montgomery Strother, who was born 29 April 1876, and died, 2 April 1968. a few days short of her ninety-second birthday.<sup>137 138</sup>

---

<sup>136</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:40, Lists following: John W. Childs, born .May 22, 1874, died October 5, 1874; James H Childs, Jr., infant son of James H. Childs, died September 27, 1874. Ida May Childs, born December 22, 1871, died December 8, 1874. These three children's deaths in a three-month period probably identify the time of the typhoid epidemic. Also listed; Nancy Childs; William H. Childs, born 1859, died 1906. A recheck of the cemetery tombstones shows a Wm. H. Childs born April 23, 1783, died February 19, 1859. Nancy Childs, born September 6, 1795. This is obviously the father and mother of James H. Childs. Many tombstones are not standing, and the William H. Childs (1859-1906) tombstone listed in Baird is not standing. This latter William H. Childs relationship is not clear from existing records on family.

<sup>137</sup> Interview, Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs, July 11, 1999.

<sup>138</sup> James H. Childs Family Bible.

[Need personal sketches.]

[Need photos]

His obituary read:

**E. L. Childs Dies at 83; Rites Today.** Ernest Lee Childs, 83, prominent Fauquier farmer and banker died Tuesday night, February 2. He had been in ill health for several years. Mr. Childs was the last surviving charter member of the Fauquier National Bank's board of directors. He had been associated with the bank since its organization in January 1902, and since 1981 had been a vice-president. He operated a prosperous farm at Casanova, where he was born and had spent his lifetime, and was active in agricultural and community work, having served on numerous boards and committees. He was a member of the Fauquier School Trustee Electoral Board and had been with the Production Marketing Association.

He was born August 24, 1870, at Casanova, son of Mr. and Mrs. James Childs. He attended county schools and a business college in Poughkeepsie, N. Y. He is survived by his wife, the former Anna Montgomery Strother, and two children, Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. of Casanova, and Mrs. James B. Nixdorff of White Sands, N.M. Funeral services will be conducted at 3 p. m., Thursday at the Warrenton Methodist Church, of which he was a member. Burial will be in Warrenton Cemetery.<sup>139</sup>

His wife Anna's obituary reads:

---

<sup>139</sup> Ernest Lee Childs Obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, 4 February 1954, page 1, column 5 and page 6, column 2.

Mrs. Anna Montgomery Strother Childs 91, died April 2 at the District Nursing Home after a long illness. She was the wife of Ernest Lee Childs who died in 1954.

Born at Broad Run, Mrs. Childs was the daughter of the late Alfred W. and Agnes Conway Smith Strother and had spend most of her life in Fauquier.

[The obituary was in error. Her father was Alpheus W. Strother son of Alpheus Jackson Strother and his wife Ann Childs, Daughter of William Childs. Alpheus Jackson Strother was the son of John Strother and Sara Jackson. John Strother was the son of James Strother and Jane Gibson.]

Mrs. Childs was a graduate of the Alexandria Hospital School of Nursing and was one of the founders of the Woman's Auxiliary of Fauquier Hospital.

She is survived by a daughter Mrs. James [Barr] Nixdorff, Pasadena, Md., a son Earnest Lee Childs, Jr., Casanova, a sister Miss Jane Strother of Washington and four grandchildren.

Funeral services were conducted April 4 at the Warrenton Methodist Church by the Rev. Jack Minnick assisted by the Rev. Charles R. Allen of Grace church, Casanova. Burial was in Warrenton Cemetery.<sup>140</sup>

Both Ernest Lee and Anna Childs are buried in the Warrenton Cemetery.<sup>141 142</sup>

Ernest Lee's mother died when he was four years old and his father died when he was eight. His Aunt Mildred "Minnie" Martin raised him. He was a banker.

---

<sup>140</sup> Anna Montgomery Strother Childs obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, 11 April, 1968, page 10, column 6.

<sup>141</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:84.

[Need more bio see Fauquier Bank anniv. Issue article by Schield.]

Ernest Lee Childs and Anna Strother had Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. and Agnes Conway Childs.

*Ernest Lee Childs, Jr.*

Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. was born in Casanova, Virginia 12 May, 1914. He now lives in Casanova, Fauquier County, Virginia, and is married to Alice Jane Buchanan Childs. They married 4 March 1947 in York, South Carolina. She was born in Opal, Fauquier County, 20 May 1926 at the home of her parents. Her father was James Clinton Buchanan and her mother was Louise Mabel Johnson, both born in Opal. Louise was the daughter of Howard Johnson, of Opal, Virginia and Alice Shumate. Alice was the daughter of Mary Weaver who married John W. Shumate at St. James Episcopal Church in Warrenton in 1863. (See Appendix 6).

Ernest Lee attended public school in Fauquier County and Washington & Lee University in Lexington, Virginia. He was with the Fauquier National Bank and a fertilizer plant in Alexandria before returning home to become a partner in the farming operation with his father. In 1941 he enlisted in the Marine Corp and served in the battles of Okinawa, Guam and Iwo Jima with the 3rd Marine War Dog Platoon. Upon returning from the service in 1945 he return to the farm.

[Need personal sketches.]

---

<sup>142</sup>All James H. Childs family dates above were also confirmed by James H. Childs Family Bible.

[Need photos]

Dale Strother Childs

E. L. Childs, Jr. and his wife Alice Jane had Dale Strother “Chip” Childs, born July 25, 1958. He attended Highland School in Fauquier County. After finishing elementary school there he attended Episcopal High School in Alexandria, Virginia. He was graduated from Washington & Lee University in 1980. On \_\_\_\_\_ he married Kathy Haworth, daughter of \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_ who was born \_\_\_\_\_ in \_\_\_\_\_, and they have one daughter Casey Vige Childs. He is a graduate of Washington and Lee University and lives in Fauquier County.<sup>143</sup>

*Agnes Conway Childs*

Agnes Conway Childs was born 2 January 1916 in \_\_\_\_\_. She died \_\_\_\_\_, 1998 in \_\_\_\_\_. She married James Barr Nixdorff \_\_\_\_\_ in \_\_\_\_\_. He was born \_\_\_\_\_ in \_\_\_\_\_, the son of \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_. Agnes and her husband are buried in Warrenton Cemetery. They had: James Barr Nixdorff, Jr., Charles Lee Nixdorff and Michael \_\_\_\_\_ Nixdorff.

[Need photos]

[Need personal sketches.]

---

<sup>143</sup> Interview, Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs, July 11, 1999.

James Barr Nixdorff, Jr.

James Barr Nixdorff, Jr., 347-2033 great grandson of Margaret Ann Martin, was born 25 June 1947 at Walter Reed Hospital in Washington, D. C. He married Janet Lynn Czolgus 1 May 1976 in Lincoln, Nebraska. She is the daughter of \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_ She married first, \_\_\_\_\_ .<sup>144</sup>

[Need photos]

[Need personal sketches.]

Charles Lee Nixdorff

[Need photos]

[Need personal sketches.]

Michael \_\_\_ Nixdorff

[Need personal sketches.]

---

<sup>144</sup> Interview with James Barr Nixdorff, Jr. (7153 Pine Ridge Road, Marshall, VA 20115), 21 May 2002.



7

## Mildred Lee “Minnie” Martin

Mildred Lee “Minnie” Martin was born 31 October 1838. Named after her aunt Mildred Martin Shumate, Minnie Martin was destined to be an old maid and died 30 November 1919, at the age of 81.<sup>145 146</sup>

Add info on living at home farm, house, allens, etc.



### ***Her Love Affair with William H. Childs***

William H. Childs was a neighbor and the brother of James H. Childs who married Minnie’s sister Margaret. At one time, he was a member of the Virginia

---

<sup>145</sup> Mildred L. Martin will (1919), Fauquier County Will Book 47: 418, County Clerk’s Office, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>146</sup> Mildred Lee Martin, death certificate no. 29282 (1919), Commonwealth of Virginia Department of Health, Richmond. This source says her birthday was the 21<sup>st</sup>, not the 31<sup>st</sup> as in the Martin family bible. She died of pneumonia.

legislature.<sup>147</sup> They lived only a few miles apart, but conducted much of their romance through the mails. Many letters from Minnie to him survive in the Childs family records. The following one is typical. When she was 37 years old, about 4 months before her father's death, she wrote this letter.<sup>148</sup>

Thursday night, March 11, 1876

My dear William

Your dear letter reached me safely tonight and how my heart did leap with pure joy when the letter was handed to me, and my dear one, you know the pleasure it gave me to hear from you, one who is so dear to me. You can guess how much disappointed I was in not seeing you last Monday. But first, as you said in your letter, I had so many with me and I didn't want them either.

I expected it was for the best that you didn't come to the Station, I will think so at least. I had a big cry when I got home. I felt very sad indeed I feel that way very often. You say that you saw me. I didn't have the pleasure of seeing you.

Mrs. Holtzclaw sent down to the Station after me to come by and take supper with her. Said she wanted to see me on business, but I declined going for I didn't feel like it. Mary was anxious to go, but I didn't want to go. I was right sick next day, but am much better now. I tried to get something for you in Warrenton that I thought would ??? you, but I couldn't find any.

---

<sup>147</sup> Interview, Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs, July 11, 1999.

We met with Mr. Grant on our way home. He insisted on us coming down to see them. Said any time we would come he would meet us at the Station & go down with us, but don't know when we can go.

You wanted to know my views about marrying for money. I think that is the cause of so much unhappiness in married life. It's owing to the fact that so many marry for money. And when poverty comes in a the door love goes out the window. I don't think there is much love when they marry alone for money. I don't think I could ever be happy to marry alone for money. You wanted to know who Mr. Bowen [?] was speaking of - he meant? Mr. Bradley and you know better don't you my ever dear one. I know you do. You say you will tell me something when you see me but please don't forget it & what was it about. I bet you something I can guess, don't you think so?

I received a letter from Dick [her brother, John Richard Martin, living in Missouri] this evening. He wrote me his little girl [his fiancée, Jemima, who he would marry exactly one month later], as he calls her, is quite ill with fever & was as low as could be. Her sister wrote for him to come on immediately to see her that her life had been despaired of. Says he has been missing her greater portion of the time & feels almost broken down. Says he is a most excellent nurse.

Says we must not blame him for not coming on the 1st of the month but must be attributable to the working of Providence. Says he had a talk with her physician &

---

<sup>148</sup> Letter from Mildred Lee Martin (Casanova, Virginia) to William L. Childs, 11 March 1876; held in 2002 by Ernest Lee Childs (5272 Casanova Road; Casanova, VA 22017). Mr. Childs is the grandson of Mildred's sister Mary Virginia Martin Childs.

and he thinks she will be well enough towards the last of the month by good nursing to accompany him to Virginia. Dick writes like he is very much distressed and **ofearse**??? he is if he loves her and I think he does.

You must excuse bad writing this time for my eye hurts me very badly tonight - feels like something was in it - hope it will be all right soon. I know I haven't written you a good letter, but will try and do better next time if I can. I must now say good by, dear one, good by. Take good care of yourself. May God bless you.

The next time I have a good dream I will write you. You know what I mean by saying a good dream, -the next time I dream of you. Good night-and may you have pleasant dreams.

Lovingly yours, M.

Family traditions says that a wedding was arranged but, William got cold feet at the very last minute. She was also going to marry Seldon Johnson. The wedding breakfast had been served. But, his brothers put him on a train to Western Virginia, where he stayed to become a pharmacist. They brothers thought Minnie had too disagreeable a personality.<sup>149</sup>

**[Insert photo of Minnie received from Aileen Wright.]**

Minnie never married. Forty two years later, her obituary read:

Miss Mildred M. Martin died suddenly at her home near Casanova on Sunday, November 30th at an advanced age. The funeral was conducted by Rev. W[illiam]. G.

---

<sup>149</sup> Interview with Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs and her husband Ernest Lee Childs, (5272 Casanova Road; Casanova, VA 22017) 25 May 2002. Seldon Johnson was the brother of Alice Jane Child's grandfather.

Pendleton.<sup>150</sup> Miss Martin was the last but one of a large family, a daughter of the late Mr. and Mrs. John Martin of this county. Her four<sup>151</sup> brothers were members of the Black Horse company and among many brave men were noted for their reckless courage.

Miss Martin was a woman of exemplary character, bright mind and interesting personality and will be greatly missed in her neighborhood.

She is survived by one sister, Mrs. William Bowen, a nephew, Mr. E. L. Childs, and one niece living in the west.<sup>152</sup>

Minnie inherited a piece of her father's Home Farm, including the old family home, from her brother Josh, and lived there until she died. Her nephew, Ernest Lee Childs looked after her affairs. In her will she divided the land into six parcels and divided them among friends and relatives.<sup>153</sup> <sup>154</sup>

She left a five-acre plot with her house, all its contents and garden land to a negro servant and companion, Susan Allen, who was raised on the farm. Susan

---

<sup>150</sup> William G. Pendleton was Rector of St. James Episcopal Church in Warrenton from 1913-1920. His photograph and dates of service are displayed in the church. [\[get dates of service.\]](#)

<sup>151</sup> There were only three of her brothers in the Black Horse.

<sup>152</sup> Mildred L. Martin obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, December 13, 1919, page 7. Her middle initial is misstated. The reference to the niece is to her brother Dick's daughter, Mamie Martin Burge. No mention was made of Dick's first two daughters.

<sup>153</sup> [Cite Will](#)

<sup>154</sup> She left one parcel to her niece Mamie Martin Burge, but Mamie sold it a few years later. She was noted as living in Morgan County, Missouri.

married Peter Moore. Susan Allen Moore died in 1963 at age 88 and willed<sup>155</sup> the home to her daughter Anna Moore Craig, who was 45 at the time. Anna still owned the house<sup>156</sup> in until her death in 2001,<sup>157</sup> but did not occupy it. From 1990-1999, the house was occupied by Thomas F. Jenkins, a friend of the Craig family.<sup>158 159</sup> The house burned to the ground in the Fall of 2001.

Cite Minnie's will which describes gifts to servants and discusses her brother John's bullet, etc.

---

<sup>155</sup> Susan Moore will (1963), Fauquier County Will Book 93: 50, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>156</sup> Land records, Fauquier County Tax Map, PIN No. 6992-81-7014.

<sup>157</sup> Anna M. Craig obituary, *The Fauquier Citizen*, January 3, 2002, p. 33. She died Dec.26, 2001.

<sup>158</sup> Interview with Thomas F. Jenkins (9248 Meetze Road, Midland, VA 22728), by Lynn Hopewell, 22 August 1999. This address is for the Martin residence on the Home Farm.

<sup>159</sup> Cassius Carter Blue, interview, July 10, 2000, 5576 Beech Road, Midland, VA 22728. Mr. Blue was raised by Susan Allen Moore and grew up at the Martin home inherited by Susan.



## 8

### Susan Elizabeth “Bettie” Martin

Named after her mother, Bettie Martin was born 9 July 1841, a twin to her brother John Richard Martin. She lived well into the 20<sup>th</sup> century until 2 May 1933, aged 91, when she “Drifted into sleep and died without arousing. [where did this quote come from?]”<sup>160</sup> <sup>161</sup> She was the last survivor of her siblings. She is buried in the Warrenton Cemetery rather than in the Martin Family Cemetery with her husband because a storm made the roads impassable.<sup>162</sup>



---

<sup>160</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:101. Tombstone is in the Warrenton Cemetery. It just lists the years 1841-1933. The death date came from her obituary.

<sup>161</sup> Susan Elizabeth Martin Bowen death certificate no. 11346 (1933), Commonwealth of Virginia Department of Health, Richmond. The information was given by her adopted son Malcom Bowen, who misstated her birth year as 1840.

<sup>162</sup> Interview with Charles H. Bowen, Jr., (Remington, Virginia), by Lynn Hopewell, June 4, 1988. He was a grandnephew of William A. Bowen. Mr. Bowen is now deceased.

At age 27, she married William A. [what is initial for?] Bowen, Jr. 15 October 1868.<sup>163</sup> <sup>164</sup> He was a member of the Black Horse Cavalry.

***Her Husband William A. Bowen, Jr.***

[NEED PHOTO.]

He was the son of William A.<sup>165</sup> and Ellen Dade Bowen. He was born \_\_\_\_\_ and died \_\_\_\_\_ [need obit]. He is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery.<sup>166</sup> (See Appendix 1 for details of his family.) His Confederate service record notes:<sup>167</sup> "5'10", dark complexion, auburn hair, grey eyes; enlisted 25 April, 1861; 19 years old; detailed to Quartermaster Dept. July to Aug. 1863; w. Stephensburg 11 October, 1863; absent with w. Oct 1863 and Jan. to Feb. 1864; paroled 6 May, 1865."

Joined Virginia Militia, commissioned as 1st Lt., 41st Reg of the 5th Brigade and 2nd Division to rank from 17 June, 1866. Signed by Gov. Peirepont, 20 July,

---

<sup>163</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 7:75. He was 27 and she was 25 [her tombstone birthdate makes her 27.] Her parents were John and Susan Martin and his were W. A. and Ellen D. Bowen. Henry H. Wyer married them. Her name is spelled as "Bettie."

<sup>164</sup> John Richard Martin Family Bible

<sup>165</sup> Interview, Charles H. Bowen, Jr., June 4, 1988.

<sup>166</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:144. No dates are shown.

<sup>167</sup> Kenneth L. Stiles, *4<sup>th</sup> Virginia Cavalry* (Lynchburg, Virginia: H. E. Howard, Inc., 1985), 100.

1866.<sup>168</sup> V Wounded at \_\_\_\_\_, Virginia, October 8, 1864. Agriculturalist.

Warrenton, Virginia. He is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery.

### ***Bettie During the War***

Alexander Hunter wrote about Bettie:

“There was another woman whose name should be added to the roll of Virginia’s heroines, and that is Miss Betty Martin . . .” Hunter then goes on to recite Betty’s role in the incident concerning her brother Bob related below.

During the winter of ’63 there had been a good many captures made by rebel scouts in the vicinity of Warrenton Junction, and the Union General Kilpatrick determined to put an end to it. For that purpose he sent out many scouting parties on a fixed night to surround all the neighboring houses and search them for the rebels. As the Martin house was a rendezvous for the Black Horse, a whole company was detailed instead of a squad.

It happened that Sergeant Martin and Mort Weaver were staying at the Martin house that night . . . they were awakened by Miss Betty Martin, Bob’s sister, a young girl in her teens, who was keeping watch. The Yankees are surrounding the house,’ she said. Bob Martin had sworn that he would never be taken alive, and he whispered to his sister to hold them back as long as she could. She opened the door,

---

<sup>168</sup> Interview with Russell C. Bowen, (Remington, Virginia), by Lynn Hopewell, June 4, 1988. He was the grandson of Henry Clay Bowen and conducted extensive research on the Bowen family. Certificate shown to author. Mr. Bowen is now deceased.

and a Federal officer with pistol cocked tried to brush by her; she met him breast to breast and declared he should not enter. The officer parleyed, but she was undaunted. Finally one of the party, infuriated, fired point blank at her, but the bullet missed her head by an inch and buried itself in the door. Hearing the report of the weapon, the Federals rushed to the front of the house, and taking advantage of this Martin leaped from the window; and with a revolver in either hand he mingled with the Blue-coats and thus slipped away. . .

Miss Betty married a gallant Black Horse Cavalryman, William Bowen, and has lived a calm, tranquil and happy life at her home near Casanova, Virginia.<sup>169</sup>

### ***Billy Bowen During the War***

**NEED PHOTO**

Jeffries relates an incident about William A. Bowen, Jr.

Our friend, Billy Bowen, made a good record during the late war as a member of the famous 'Black Horse Cavalry.' His good soldiership was not his only distinction, for his "Irish Bulls" became proverbs with his companions.

Not having been thrown with him during that period I am unable to quote any of these, but one story before, and one after the war I will relate of him. It is said that while yet in his teens he attended the inauguration of President Buchanan.

---

<sup>169</sup> Alexander Hunter, *Women of the Debatable Land* (Washington D.C., Corden Publishing Company, 1912): 58-59.

He (Bowen) has some impediment in his speech. When he returned home his father said, 'Billy, did you bring me the President's message?' 'Ain't nobody sent you no message by me', replied he.

Subsequent to the war and after his marriage, Billy attended one of the popular sessions of the County court. Being socially belated he was seen the next morning after sunrise coming in through the high grass, much bedraggled. Upon inquiry of as to his whereabouts during the night, he promptly said, "I got drabbed on jury." This has ever since been a home defense for delinquents in his section.<sup>170</sup>

### ***Betties' Death***

Her obituary reads as follows:

Mrs. Bettie Bowen passed away May 2nd after a long illness at her son's home, Malcom Bowen, Casanova, Va., at the age of 93 years. She lived a calm, tranquil and happy life at her home near Casanova, Virginia. She was the daughter of John and Susan E. Martin, being the last of a large family. **[recheck this text.]**

She leaves to mourn her death one son, Malcom Bowen, three grandchildren, Herman Bowen, Mary Helm and Bettie Bowen, and one nephew, E. L. Childs. Funeral services were held Thursday afternoon at 2 P.M., interment in family burying ground."<sup>171</sup>

---

<sup>170</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 103.

<sup>171</sup> Susan Elizabeth Bowen obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, May 6, 1933, page 1. She was 91. She was not buried in the family burying ground as intended, but in Warrenton Cemetery.

## ***Their Son Malcom Martin Bowen***

**NEED PHOTO**

At the age of one month, their adopted son Malcom M. Bowen was left on their doorstep.<sup>172</sup> He was born near Casanova 11 September 1879, and died in Warrenton, 14 April 1954.<sup>173</sup> On December 22, 1898, he married Miss Clara Anne Strickler [source?]. She was born 8 November 1878 died 12 July, 1965. She was buried in the Warrenton Cemetery next to her husband.<sup>174</sup>

His obituary read:

**Services for M. M. Bowen Held Friday.** Malcom Martin Bowen, 74, prominent Casanova farmer, died Wednesday, April 14, at Physician's Hospital, Warrenton, where he had been a patient for two days. He was admitted to the hospital following a paralytic stroke. Funeral services were conducted from his home on Friday, April 16, by his pastor, the Rev. Joseph Graver, and the burial was in the Warrenton cemetery.

Mr. Bowen was born near Casanova on September 11, 1879, son of the late William and Bettie Bowen. In early life he joined the Calverton Baptist Church and for a number of years served as a deacon. On December 22, 1898, he married Miss

---

<sup>172</sup> Interview, Charles H. Bowen, Jr., June 4, 1988. Note left with baby on doorstep, "October 11, 1879. Mrs. Bowen, This child is given to you as yours by his Mother," note shown to author. Mr. Bowen is now deceased.

<sup>173</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1: 101. Gravestone, Warrenton, Cemetery, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>174</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1: 101.

Clara Anne Strickler, who survives him. He is also survived by two daughters, Mrs. J. B. Helm of Morrisville and Mrs. Alfred Gebhardt of Washington: a foster daughter, Mrs. Earl Embry of Catlett; two grandchildren and two great-grandchildren.<sup>175</sup>

### ***Malcom Martin Bowen's Children***

Malcom and Clara had three children.<sup>176</sup>

1. Mary
2. Herman, b. 17 April 1901, d. 17 March, 1952.<sup>177</sup>
3. Bettie
4. Rebecca

*Mary ?? Bowen*

[Need photo]

Mary was born ??? in ???? and died ??? in ??? She is buried in ??? She married **James Brewster Helm** ??? in ???. He was born ??? in???? and died ??? in ??? He is buried in ??? They lived , lived in ???.

---

<sup>175</sup> Malcom Bowen Obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, 22 April 1954, page B-1, column 4.

<sup>176</sup> Interview with Helen (Fifield) Helm, (Mrs. James Arnold Helm: 11889 Cemetery Road, Remington, VA 22734-2128), by Lynn Hopewell, 18 May, 2002.

<sup>177</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:101.

*James Arnold Helm*

[Need photo]

**James Arnold Helm** married **Helen Wood Fifield**, ??? in ???. He was born ??? in ??? and died ???? in ???? 2000. He is buried in ??? She was born ??? in ????, daughter of ??? and ??? of ???. James Helm was a ?????. His wife was a ?????. They lived in Remington. They had the following children:

1. ??
2. ??
3. ??

James Arnold Helm's obituary read as follows:

[get obit.]

*Herman Bowen*

[Need photo]

Herman ?? Bowen was born ??? in ???. He died ???, 1952 in Washington, D. C. He married first, **Pauline** ??? , ??? in ???. She was born ??? in ???, daughter of ???? and ??? They had no children. He was a ??? . They lived in ???. He married second, ??? on ???? in ?????. They had the following children:

1. ??
2. ??
3. ??

*Bettie ??? Bowen*

[Need photo]

Bettie was born ??? in ???. [grew up in D.C.? ask Helen Helm.] She died ??? in ????. She is buried ????. She married Alfred Gebhardt, ??? in ???. He was born ??? in ????, son of ??? and ???. He died ??? in ???. He is buried ???;

They had one child, Bettie Ann. She was born ??? in ????. She married ??? in ???, son of ??? and ???. They live in ????. She was a ???. He was a ???.

*Rebecca Bowen*

[Need photo]

Rebecca was a foster daughter of Malcom and Clara Bowen. She married Earl ?? Embry and lived in Midland, Virginia.



9

## John Richard “Dick” Martin

Of all the children of John and Susan Martin, we know the most about their son Dick. Of the three brothers, only he had surviving descendants.

Black Horse Cavalryman Dick Martin was the middle brother of the Martin boys. He was born 9 July 1841 in Fauquier County. He left Fauquier County shortly after the war and spent the next 40 years in Missouri. He died in Fauquier at the age of 74, 5 January 1916.<sup>178</sup> He was the last of his brothers to survive. He was a twin to his sister Susan Elizabeth Martin. He was almost 20 when the war began.



*Writing on  
photograph:  
J. Richard Martin,*

### ***Dick Martin’s Black Horse Service***

---

<sup>178</sup> John Richard Martin entry, Fauquier County Deaths 1912-1917; volume 4: 1201, County Clerk’s Office, Warrenton, Virginia. Died January 5, 1916. He was 74 years, 7 months and 17 days. [Incorrectly calculated]. He was born in Fauquier County. His father was John Martin and his mother, Susan Fisher, both born in Fauquier County. He was listed as married. His comrade in arms, Hugh Hamilton gave the information.

Alexander Hunter said of him:

Dick Martin ...was second to none in the Black Horse for courage and nerve. It was he who had the proud distinction of being chosen by Jackson at Harper's Ferry to carry to the Lee the tidings of its surrender.

It was he whom Lee chose to bear his dispatches to Jackson, urging him to effect a junction at Sharpsburg. Dick performed his mission well; but he killed his thoroughbred horse in doing so.<sup>179</sup>

In another book, Hunter said:

Dick Martin ...had an encounter with some of the Blue Blouses that will point a moral even if it does not adorn a tale. Dick at that time was a harum scarum fellow of about twenty, a born scout who was always seeking adventures, and loving hazard for danger's sake.

One day he was prowling in the woods on foot near an infantry camp when he saw a half-dozen soldiers leave their quarters and make their way down a branch. This excited his curiosity, and he followed them for about a mile, then they halted and Dick wondered what they were up to.

He was not kept long in suspense. They gathered together under a large tree, took off their coats, spread an oilcloth on the ground, disgorged several bottles, next a deck of cards and a box of bone chips. Then after taking 'a smile' all round, they sat themselves down tailor fashion and began to deal the cards.

---

<sup>179</sup> Hunter, *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*, 668.

Then Dick knew that they were indulging in that fascinating pursuit known as draw poker. Dick's curiosity changed into a deep interest, for he was an expert in that game, as many of the Black Horsemen found out to their sorrow, so he edged himself to a clump of briars within a few feet of the players.

They were so intensely absorbed in the game that they did not look up, save when the bottle was passed around, then Dick's mouth would water, and it required all his self-control to refrain from rushing forward and taking a swig himself.

So the forenoon wore away and the man in the bushes noticed that the chips all gravitated one way, and hands went into pockets and greenbacks were handed over to buy more chips from the pile, but they would gravitate as at first, and as the passion of greed and gaming, fed by the liquor, rose in each breast the stakes grew larger and the betting fiercer.

Nothing was heard but the mysterious words: 'Jack pot, Kitty! Raise you! Pass! One card; two cards; three cards. Flush; full house; and constantly the chips were scooped up by one man, who retailed for cash, until the winner had a big wad of the green on the grass, upon which he placed a bottle to keep the notes from blowing away.

Finally Dick got tired, and jumping to his feet he cried: 'Surrender! Hands up!'

Now, if Satan himself, with horns, hoof and tail, smelling with sulfur, with eyes of flame, had jumped in the ring, he could not have created more dismay. The players' hands went up spasmodically, and they seemed turned into stone and sat there, stolid, motionless, and stared and stared with mouths agape. Dick's words eased the situation. 'Gentlemen,' he said, making a courtly bow, for your real highwayman is always polite, 'I don't mean any harm, but I'm playing a lite [?] hand and want that pile.' It was silently handed him by the winner, and at this the losers perked up, the

color came to their cheeks, the light to their eyes, the open mouths closed in a grin, and then opened again in convulsive laughter, all except the winner. He couldn't see the point in the joke.

One of the players handed Dick the bottle and he took 'a smile,' a very long one indeed, and then disappeared in the bushes. He did not search the other men. I never knew a Black Horseman to rob a prisoner, but I am bound to confess that I did not know the Black Horsemen who would have let that Yankee gambler walk off with his ill-gotten gains.

After the war Dick emigrated to Missouri, became a schoolmaster, got converted, dropped his evil ways and married, and became an estimable citizen and pillar of the church.

This was a combination of righteousness that would lead one to expect that the conscience fund of the War Department would be enriched to the amount that he cabbaged from that Yankee sport, but Dick was not that kind of hairpin Christian.<sup>180 181</sup>

[Insert photo of application for Cross of Honor.]

---

<sup>180</sup> Hunter, *The Women of the Debatable Land*; 208-209. This book is sprinkled with many anecdotes about the Black Horse Cavalry.

<sup>181</sup> John Richard Martin application, "Southern Cross of Honor", November 7, 1913; owned 1999 by the author, bought at a Civil War Show. He is shown as a member of Camp No. 91, United Confederate Veterans. The application is also signed by Hugh Hamilton, F.R. Duke, and approved by A.F. Rose, Adjutant.

## ***His Move to Missouri***

When he was about 26, he moved to Missouri. One obituary noted:

“For a short period he was in the Mercantile business at Rappahannock Sta. after the close of the war, but a devastated country afforded very little promise for a livelihood, and he sought the fertile, and prosperous State of Missouri, where he turned his attention to the education of the young, and stood well as a teacher ...”<sup>182</sup>

A comrade put it a little differently:

“After the war Dick emigrated to Missouri, became a schoolmaster, got converted, dropped his evil ways and married, and became an estimable citizen and pillar of the church.”<sup>183</sup>

According to a newspaper sketch, he taught school in Fauquier for a few years after the war. Given the economic devastation after the war, he probably both taught and worked as a merchant too.

He lived in various places around Fulton, Calloway County, Missouri, including Pike, Montgomery and Audrain Counties.<sup>184</sup> All were within a sixty-mile radius of Pike County. He settled down in Fulton, and had a long career there as a school teacher. In 1913, at the age 72, he was described as the “oldest teacher in the

---

<sup>182</sup> John Richard Martin obituary, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper, in family papers of Aileen Burge Wright, owned 2002 by the author.

<sup>183</sup> Hunter, *The Women of the Debatable Land*; 208-209.

<sup>184</sup> Fauquier County Deed Book 89: 125, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia. He was living in Audrain in March 1897 when his brother Josh's land was divided among his heirs. The deed mentions J. R. Martin's wife, Mary Martin.

Kingdom of Calloway.”<sup>185</sup> He was a pretty good schoolteacher—according to his granddaughter, he was excused from the regular testing then required of teachers.

He married twice and had three daughters. First he married Jemima Gilmore eleven years after the war. They had two daughters, Lucy and Bettie. Bettie never married. Lucy’s son, DeWitt Smith, aged 98 in 2002, lives in Siloam Springs, Arkansas.

Dick and Jemima divorced and he married Mary Gregory who had been married twice before and who had two children from these earlier marriages. They had one child, a daughter, Mamie. Mamie’s daughter Aileen, aged 86, in 2002, lives in Jacksonville, Illinois. Both of Dick’s grandchildren gave invaluable assistance to the author.

For twenty-two years Dick was the only survivor of his brothers. At the age of 74, in 1915, he went home to Fauquier to die.

### ***Dick’s Marriage to Jemima Gilmore***

He first married Jemima Gilmore, 11 April 1876, in Pike County, Missouri.<sup>186 187</sup> She was 22 and he was 34, 12 years her senior. Jemima seems to have had no

---

<sup>185</sup> Mary Martin Obituary, *Fulton Missouri Telegraph*, January 31, 1913, page 1, column. A similar obituary was in *Fulton Gazette*, January 31, 1913, page 8, column 4. See obituary under Mary Martin below.

<sup>186</sup> Pike County Marriage Register, 1865-1879, page 495, entry 2331, Bowling Green, Missouri. Copy from Family History Library Film No. 974635. Marriage solemnized by James W. Duvall, Minister of the Gospel. This record records her name as “Pinkie J. Gilmore.”

middle name, but her nickname was “Pinkie.” It was so much a part of her, that she was listed on her marriage certificate as “Pinkie J. Gilmore.”

[Cite letter from Dick Martin to Mrs. Lucy A. Gilmore asking for permission to marry Jemima, dated 23 October, 1875.]

[DeWitt has letter from his grandfather to his mother and her sister dated 10 Sep. 1880/1883 telling how much he missed them.]

She was born 28 March 1854 near Bowling Green, Missouri.<sup>188</sup> Her father \_\_\_\_\_ name, birth and death dates, birth and death places?? \_\_\_\_\_ was born in South Carolina and her mother, Lucy A. Gilmore, \_\_\_\_\_ name, birth and death dates, birth and death places?? \_\_\_\_\_ (states are from census records) \_\_\_\_\_, in Kentucky.<sup>189</sup>

---

<sup>187</sup>John Richard Martin Family Bible, publisher unknown; marriage, birth and death record pages only, owned by author in 2002. The bible passed from Dick Martin to his daughter Mamie (Martin) Burge, to her daughter, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright. Here, her name is recorded as Jemima. Jemima is from the Old Testament, one of Job's daughter.

<sup>188</sup>“Mrs. C. O. Kinney Passes Away,” undated clipping from unidentified newspaper in family papers of Jemima Gilmore (Mrs. Charles O. Kinney), inherited by her daughter, Lucy Ann Martin (Mrs. DeWitt Nathaniel Smith) of Owasso, Oklahoma; owned in 2002 by Albert Allie Scott (Rt. 1, P.O. Box 86, Wesley, AR 72773) husband of Lucy's deceased granddaughter, Nadine Loretta Smith.

<sup>189</sup> J. Richard Martin household, 1880 U. S. census, Montgomery County, Missouri, population schedule, Middletown, Prairie Township, enumeration district 113, dwelling 19, family 19; copy, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah. Jemima was born in Missouri, her father in South Carolina and her mother in Missouri. Lucy is three and Bettie is one. Dick is teaching school, Jemima is keeping house. Dick was thirty eight and Jemima was twenty four.

They had two daughters,  
Bettie Bowen Martin and  
Lucy Ann Martin.<sup>190</sup>



*Charles O. Kinney and his wife Jemima  
Gilmore*

Dick and Jemima executed  
a deed in 1877 for his interest  
in a Fauquier property.<sup>191</sup>  
Their residence was in still in  
Missouri but they had moved  
from Callaway County to  
Vandalia in neighboring Audrain County.<sup>192</sup>

According to the 1880 census, they had moved again and were living in  
neighboring Montgomery County, southeast of Audrain County, Missouri. Dick was  
teaching school.<sup>193</sup> Montgomery County deeds show no land bought or sold by them,  
so perhaps their residence there was temporary.

---

<sup>190</sup> Bettie Martin obituary, *Owasso Reporter*, Owasso, Oklahoma, 3 April, 1969, page 7, column 6. This obituary gave Lucy's middle name.

<sup>191</sup> Fauquier County Deed Book 69:170, Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia. He and his wife deeded Licking Run land that he inherited from his father to Edward M. Grove, 12 November, 1877.

<sup>192</sup> Audrain County is adjacent to Callaway.

<sup>193</sup> 1880 U. S. census, Montgomery County, Missouri, population schedule, Middletown, Prairie Township, ED 113, dwelling 19, family 19, copy, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah

### *Jemima's Marriage to Charles Kinney*

Apparently Dick and Jemima divorced in the late 1880s before his marriage to Mary Gregory. On 24 May 1891, in Pike County, a pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church, S. D. Kendall, married Jemima and Charles O. Kinney.<sup>194</sup> He was born in West Point, Hancock County, Illinois, on 16 November 1864. His parents were Joseph Kenny, born in Buffalo, New York. His mother was Ann Graham, from \_\_\_\_\_.<sup>195</sup> On her marriage certificate, Jemima said she was from Bowling Green, Pike County, Missouri. Charles was 26 and Jemima was 37, 11 years older. Jemima's daughters were 11 and 12.

In 1900, both daughters, Lucy and Bettie, were living with their mother and step-father in Bowling Green, Pike County, Missouri, along with Joseph R. Kinney, aged 12, Charles' son from a previous marriage.

Lucy was a schoolteacher. Bettie's occupation was listed as "housework." Charles and Jemima owned a mortgaged farm.<sup>196</sup>

---

<sup>194</sup> Pike County Marriage License, County Clerk's Office, Bowling Green, Missouri.

<sup>195</sup> Charles O. Kinney death certificate no. 55-1888 (1930), State Department of Health, State of Oklahoma, Oklahoma City. His occupation was listed as "merchant."

<sup>196</sup> Charles Kinney household, 1900 U. S. census, Pike County, Missouri, population schedule, Bowling Green, ward 8, enumeration district 89, supervisors district 9, sheet 7A, dwelling 148, family 19, copy, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah. Charles was born Nov. 1864, was thirty five, and had been married nine years. Jemima was born Mar. 1854, was 46, and was the mother of two living children. Charles was born in Illinois, his father in New York and his mother in Illinois. Jemima was born in Missouri, her father in South Carolina and her mother in Kentucky. The two girls were born in Missouri, their father in Virginia and their mother in Missouri. Charles was a farmer, Lucy was teaching school.

They were not listed in the 1910 census in Missouri, so the surrounding states were searched. The family was found in Owasso, Tulsa County, Oklahoma. From Bettie's obituary we learn that they moved there in 1901. Charles prospered and had a department store. He served as mayor of Owasso.

Need a brief sketch of Jemima and one of Charles to go here. He was mayor of Owasso and operated grocery. Did Jemima teach? Where? Etc. These sketches can be one page, that's just fine.



*Lucy and Bettie about 12 and 10 years old*

They moved for one year to San Diego, California, but according to Lucy's son, they didn't like it there. In 1921 they moved to Edmond Oklahoma, Oklahoma County, Oklahoma, a suburb of Oklahoma

City, some 100 miles from Owasso, because Bettie didn't want to teach in Owasso anymore.<sup>197</sup>

Charles died 7 November 1930, 9 days before his 66<sup>th</sup> birthday.<sup>198</sup> Jemima died 13 October 1938, aged 84. They both died in Edmond. They are buried in Memorial Park Cemetery in Oklahoma City, near Edmond.<sup>199</sup>

Charles' obituary read as follows:

**C. O. Kinney, Edmond Business Man Dies.** Charles O. Kinney, one of Edmond's highly respected grocers, passed away Friday night, November 7 at his home following a heart attack. Mr. Kinney's passing leaves to mourn his loss countless friends, besides his family. Funeral services were conducted by the Pass Funeral directors Monday, at 3 p. m., at the Presbyterian church with Rev. C. W. Spier officiating. Burial was at Memorial Park cemetery. Mr. and Mrs. N. D. Smith and their son and his wife DeWitt Smith, of Tulsa; Mrs. A. T. Kinney, Hutchinson,

---

<sup>197</sup> Interview with Nathaniel DeWitt Smith, Jr. (811 W. Elgin Street, Siloam Springs, AR 72761), by Lynn Hopewell, 24 April 2001. Mr. Smith is Dick Martin's grandson.

<sup>198</sup> Charles O. Kinney, Oklahoma death certificate no. 55-1888 (1969) Oklahoma State Department of Health, Oklahoma City.

<sup>199</sup> Interview with Shelma White; (Memorial Park Cemetery, 13400 North Kelly Avenue, Oklahoma City, OK, 73131), by Lynn Hopewell, 3 April 2001. Ms. White kindly provided burial information and photographs of the family tombstones. The cemetery is at the boundary of Edmond and Oklahoma City. The Kinneys and Bettie are buried in Lot 268, Section 16

Kans.; J .R. Kinney, Denver, Colo.; and Ernest Bryant and wife of Owasso, Okla.

Attended the funeral of Mr. C. O. Kinney.<sup>200</sup>

Jemima's obituaries read as follows:

**OBITUARY. Mrs. O. C. Kinney**—Jemima Gilmore was born near Bowling Green, Mo. On the 28th day of March in 1854. She passed away October 13, 1938 at the age of 84 years, six months and 15 days.

She was united in marriage April, 1876, to J. Richard Martin. To this union two children, Lucy Ann and Bettie B. were born, While these children were babes, Mr. Martin passed away.

In 1891 on the 28th day of May<sup>201</sup> she was married to Charles Kinney. He also preceded her in death passing away on November 7, 1930.

Mr. and Mrs. Kinney moved to Oklahoma in 1901. In 1921 they made their home in Edmond. Mrs. Kinney had reared several orphan children. She was a member of the Presbyterian church of Edmond.

Mrs. Kinney leaves to mourn her passing, two daughters, Mrs. N. D. Smith and Miss Bettie Martin, a grandson, DeWitt Smith, a sister, Mrs. Marion Lowery and several nieces and nephews.<sup>202</sup>

**Mrs. C. O. Kinney Passes Away**—(1:00 am, Oct. 13, 1938 handwritten on clipping.) Mrs. C. O. Kinney, age 84, passed away Thursday morning at the home of

---

<sup>200</sup> Charles O. Kinney obituary, *Edmond Booster*, Edmond Oklahoma, 13 November 1930, page 1, column 2. A similar obituary was in the *Edmond Sun*, Thursday, 13 November 1930, page 6, column 2.,

<sup>201</sup> Their marriage certificate says 24 May.

her daughter, Mrs. N. D. Smith, at Owasso, Oklahoma, following a two month's illness.

Mrs. Kinney is a former Edmond resident, and she and the late Mr. Kinney operated a grocery here for several years.

Funeral services will be at the Presbyterian church at 2 p.m., with Rev. C. W. Spier officiating. Burial will



*Bettie Bowen Martin, age about  
19*

be in Memorial Park Cemetery, with Paas Funeral Directors in charge. (Oct. 14 handwritten on clipping.) Survivors are two daughters, Mrs. Smith and Miss Betty Martin, also of Owasse; a stepson, Joe Kinney of Denver Colorado; one sister, Mrs. Lowery of West Tulsa; a grandson, Mr. DeWitt Smith, his wife and daughter.<sup>203</sup>

### *Dick and Jemima's Daughter Bettie Bowen Martin*

Bettie Bowen Martin, named after Dick's twin sister, was born 7 April 1879 in Vandalia, Audrain County, Missouri, about 15 miles west of Bowling Green, in Pike County.<sup>204</sup> It appears that Bettie never married, and was said to not trust men.

---

<sup>202</sup> Jemima Gilmore Kinney obituary, *Edmond Star*, Edmond Oklahoma, 20 October 1938, page 2, columns 2-8.

<sup>203</sup> Jemima Gilmore obituary, previously discussed.

<sup>204</sup> Bettie Martin obituary, *Nowata Daily Star*, Nowata, Oklahoma, 24 March 1969, page 4, columns 4-5.

According to her sister's son-in-law, "She never even dated."<sup>205</sup> She worked some years as a school teacher in and around Owasso and also taught at the Pryor, Oklahoma orphanage.

**Need sketch of Bettie here. She was a school teacher. What did she teach? .**

She died at age 89, 23 March 1969 in the Nowata, Oklahoma General Hospital, about 35 miles north of her home town of Owasso. She is buried 100 miles from her home, in Memorial Park Cemetery in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, next to her mother and step-father.<sup>206 207 208</sup>

Bettie's obituary in the Nowata paper read:

**Miss Martin Dies at 89.** Services are pending for Miss Betty Martin, 89, of Owasso, who died Sunday in Nowata General Hospital. Miss Martin was born in Vandalia, Mo., April 7, 1879, and moved to Owasso in 1901. She taught school in and around Owasso and for the past eight years she had taught at Pryor Orphanage.

---

<sup>205</sup> Interview with Albert Allie Scott (Rt. 1, P.O. Box 86, Wesley, AR 72773), by Lynn Hopewell, 18 April 2001. Mr. Scott was DeWitt Smith's son-in-law.

<sup>206</sup> Betty Bowen Martin funeral record sheet; Tulsa-Whisenhunt Funeral Home, (Tulsa-Whisenhunt Funeral Home, 2211 E. 6th Street, Tulsa, OK Tulsa, Oklahoma). Copy provided to author by funeral home, 3 April, 2001.

<sup>207</sup> Interview, Shelma White, 3 April, 2001.

<sup>208</sup> The 1880 census records her age as one year. Her tombstone says her birth was in 1879. Only the 1900 U. S. census records her birth year as 1880.

Her father was mayor of Owasso at one time and had a department store. Survivors include a nephew, DeWitt Smith of Greenfield, Iowa.<sup>209</sup>

Her obituary in the Owasso paper read:

**Pioneer Teacher Dies in Nowata.** Bettie B. Martin, 89 died March 23 in Nowata, Okla. Miss Martin came to Owasso in 1901 and was a school teacher in and around Owasso. The last eight years of her teaching career, however, were in the Pryor Orphanage. For years she had made her home with her sister Lucy Ann Smith, who preceded her in death in 1966. Survivors include: DeWitt Smith, nephew and wife of Owasso; a cousin, Marguerite Paulson, Yakima Wash.; a brother-in-law, Mr. N. D. Smith of Owasso.<sup>210</sup>

The cousin, Marguerite Paulson of Yakima, Washington, mentioned in Bettie's obituary was the daughter of Jemima's sister, Marion Lowery, "Aunt Madge".<sup>211</sup>

[DeWitt has newspaper clipping noting that Bettie was  
second teacher in Owasso.]

*Dick and Jemima's Daughter Lucy Ann Martin*

---

<sup>209</sup> *Nowata Daily Star*, 24 March 1969

<sup>210</sup> *Nowata Daily Star*, 24 March 1969.

<sup>211</sup> Interview, Albert Allie Scott, 18 April 2001.

Lucy was born 31 March, 1877<sup>212</sup> 213 in Missouri, probably in Vandalia. At age 26, Lucy married Nathaniel DeWitt Smith of Owasso, Oklahoma, who was also 26, in Owasso, 5 April, 1903.<sup>214</sup> He was born in Maysville, Arkansas in 1877 and died in deathplace? February, death date? 1970.<sup>215</sup> He was the son of Jackson Smith and Penelope Fields. His parents are buried in Fairview Cemetery in Owasso.



| Lucy Ann Martin, age about 21 |

According to Bettie's obituary, Lucy died in where?? [DeWitt knows his mother's death date? \_\_\_\_\_ 1966 [headstone says 1965]. She is buried beside her

---

<sup>212</sup> Interview with Wildeana ( ) Smith (Mr. Smith) 1221 East Main Street entry, AR 72734-8212) by Lynn Hopewell, 16 August 2001. Mrs. Smith is no relation to DeWitt Smith, but purchased his home when he moved to the nursing home and has befriended him. Information provided her by DeWitt Smith.

<sup>213</sup> J. Richard Martin household, 1880 U. S. census, Montgomery County, Missouri, population schedule, Middletown Prairie Twp., enumeration district [ED] 113, supervisor's district  , sheet 113, dwelling 19, family 19. This census says she is three, implying 1877 as her birth year. Her tombstone says 1877. Only the 1900 census says her birth year is 1878.

<sup>214</sup> Marriage License, No. 948, United States of America, Indian Territory, Northern District with Certificate of Marriage by S. W. Marr, a minister of the gospel. Copy provided author by N. DeWitt Smith. The license says Lucy was 25.

<sup>215</sup> Selected Owassa, Oklahoma cemetery listings, Owassa Historical Society, <http://www.rootsweb.com/~okohs/index.htm>.

husband in Fairview Cemetery, Owasso, Oklahoma.<sup>216</sup> Lucy and Nathaniel had two children, Nathaniel DeWitt Smith, Jr. and Charles Joseph Smith. Charles died as an infant and is buried in Owasso, next to his parents.

[Need sketch of Lucy's life and Charles.

Bettie was a school teacher: Albert Scott suggests: Contact Ester Cornish, Clarkswell, knew Nina's sister. ]

[DeWitt has copy of teaching certificate given to his mother, 24 July 1924. Recognizes earning credits at State Teachers College in Edmond Ok.]



DeWitt Smith at his desk as a teacher, 1967.

*Lucy and Nathaniel's son, N. Dewitt Smith*

Nathaniel DeWitt Smith, Jr. shares a tombstone with his wife, already inscribed with his birthdate of 22 February 1904. He was born in \_\_\_\_\_ [DeWitt ..where were you born?] \_\_\_\_\_. DeWitt married Nina Ellen Cornish 17 July, 1930 in Bartlesville,

---

<sup>216</sup> Letter from Marcia Boutwell (City of Owasso, 207 South Cedar, Owasso, OK 74055) to Lynn Hopewell, 10 April 2001. Summarized Smith tombstone information.

Oklahoma. She was the daughter of Charles J. Cornish and Aseneth E. French.

Nina was born 16 June 1911 in Oblong, Illinois , and died 5 August 2000 in Siloam Springs, Arkansas. She is buried in the Fairview Cemetery, Owasso, Tulsa County, Oklahoma in the Smith family plot.

Nina's obituary read:

**Nina Ellen Smith.** Nina Ellen Smith, 89, a resident of Siloam Springs, Ark., died Saturday, Aug. 5, 2000, at Siloam Springs Memorial Hospital. Born June 16, 1911, in Oblong, Illinois, she was the daughter of Charles J. Cornish and Aseneth E. French Cornish. Formerly a resident of Owasso, Okla., Smith had lived in the Gentry and Siloam Springs area since 1972. She was a homemaker and a member of the Seventh Day Adventist Church in Gentry. She was preceded in death by one daughter, Nadine Loretta Scott.

Survivors include her husband of 70 years, DeWitt of the home; one son-in-law and his wife, Albert and Lois Scott of Wesley, Ark. ... Witt and Nina's daughter Nadine [recheck, doesn't make sense].<sup>217</sup>

For 25 years after leaving Owasso, DeWitt Smith lived in Gentry, Benton County, Arkansas. At age 97, in 2001, DeWitt Smith lives in nearby Siloam Springs in a nursing home. DeWitt has prepared his own obituary:

He was born February 22, 1904 in what used to be called Indian Territory at Owasso, Oklahoma to Nathaniel D. Smith and Lucy Ann Martin Smith. He grew up

---

<sup>217</sup> [Letter??] with Albert Allie Scott (Rt. 1, P.O. Box 86, Wesley, AR 72773), by Lynn Hopewell, 18 April 2001. Mr. Scott was DeWitt Smith's son-in-law. The obit was in error. She was a resident of nearby Gentry, Arkansas.

in Owasso and attended high school there in his Freshman and Sophomore years, but finished his high school education at Ramona, Oklahoma in 1922.

He attained his TH. B degree at Emmanuel Missionary College in Michigan and his B.A. degree at the State Teachers College in Edmond, Oklahoma. He took graduate courses in instrumental

music at the Oklahoma State University in Norman, Oklahoma and at the Michigan State

University at Ann Arbor. His first public school teaching was at

Delaware, Oklahoma where he served as principal of the grade

school in 1930 and in that year married Nina Ellen Cornish on

June 17th at Bartlesville,

Oklahoma. One daughter, Nadine Smith (Scott) died in 1973 and his wife on August 5, 2000. Mr. Smith



*Four generations: Dewitt holding his daughter Nadine, his mother Lucy, his grandmother Jemima*

started out life serving one summer as Assistant pastor of the Mobile Adventist Church in Alabama, but soon found out that his talents lay in the direction of teaching rather than preaching. Altogether he taught 40 years. Five of these years were in Adventist schools. One at Binger, Oklahoma, one at Tulsa, Oklahoma, and one at the South Side school at Chicago, Illinois, one at the Golden Gate Academy at Berkeley, California and one at the Sunnydale Academy at Centralia, Missouri. The retraining 35 years were in the following public high schools: 10 years in Oklahoma

at Delaware and Homing 5 years in Illinois at New Canton and Ohio, 1 year in Nebraska at Sargent, 19 years in Iowa at Richland and Orient.

DeWitt's friend Wildeana Smith, of Gentry, described him thus:

DeWitt is a very intelligent man. After retirement he taught himself Greek and Hebrew so he could research Bible issues and has written several books. He is accomplished on the piano and has his in his room where he still plays beautiful and "hard" classical music.

His mind is good enough to still play the stock market. His grandmother told him how very brilliant his grandfather Martin was. If schools had trouble with any math

it was brought to him. I guess he drank on weekends which caused the divorce, but she must have been proud of him to share this with DeWitt as a teenager. DeWitt has always told me his mother Lucy was very smart. So is DeWitt?<sup>218</sup>

DeWitt and Nina had one child, a daughter, Nadine Loretta Smith, who was born 5 February 1938 in Hominy, Oklahoma where her father was teaching. She



*Nadine Smith and  
Albert Scott on their  
wedding day*

---

<sup>218</sup> Letter, Wildeana Smith to Lynn Hopewell, 24 April 2001.

attended Union College in Lincoln, Nebraska, earning a teaching certificate. Nadine taught school in a private church school in Iola, Kansas, about 110 miles N. E. of her home in Owassa, Oklahoma.

Nadine married Albert Allie Scott, 9 October 1960 in Stanwood, Washington. They were married in the home of Pastor C. A. Anderson of East Stanwood, Washington. Albert was working at the Walsh Saw Mill Company near Ronald. He was born 10 February 1935, in Granger, Washington and was the son of Willis Mark Scott and Florence Gertrude Boss. In 2001, he lives in Wesley, Arkansas. He and Nadine had no children.<sup>219</sup> At age 37, Nadine died 29 August 1975 in Wesley. She is buried in Bohannon Mountain Cemetery in Wesley.

**[Need a little longer sketch about Nadine's life.]**

#### *What Happened to Dick's Relationship to his First Two Daughters?*

According to DeWitt Smith, there was a complete estrangement between Dick and his first family. DeWitt's mother, Lucy, never saw her father again after she moved to Oklahoma. She knew about her half-sister Mamie, but never met her. DeWitt said that Dick was not then a Christian and drank heavily. Dick's granddaughter Aileen said that her mother never mentioned her half-sisters by her father.

---

<sup>219</sup> Interview, Albert Allie Scott, 18 April 2001. All information on his wife and himself came from Mr. Scott.

This estrangement is confirmed by other evidence. In her 1919 will, his sister Mildred, back in Virginia, only recognized one niece, Mamie, Dick's daughter by Mary Gregory. There was no mention of Lucy or Bettie. In his daughter Mamie's obituary, it was noted that two sisters (according to Mamie's daughter Aileen, from her mother's earlier marriages) had predeceased her thus Mamie certainly knew those half-sisters, but did not mention her other two half-sisters, Bettie and Lucy. Bettie's obituary also mentions that her "father" had a department store. This reference was to her stepfather, Charles Kinney, not her father Dick. Yet, Bettie certainly knew who her father was as he was clearly named in her funeral home record. She and her sister were 12 and 13 when their mother remarried.

**[Quote from Dick's letter to children. NEED LETTER]**

And finally, in one of Jemima's obituaries above, it was stated that Dick had died while the girls were "babes". They were both in their mid 30s when their father died. Jemima seems to have wanted to erase her connection to Dick, and seems to have succeeded.

### ***Dick's Marriage to Mary Gregory***

Dick Martin married his second wife, Mary A. Gregory about 1888 or 1889. **[Need date and place of marriage.]** She was born 1 April 1860 in Wright City, Warren

County, Missouri, and was the daughter of John B. Gregory.<sup>220 221</sup> He was about 19 years her senior, but he outlived her. Dick was now about 48 and Mary about 29. Mary had lived in a foster home.<sup>222</sup> They had one child, a daughter, Mamie. Mary had been married twice before.

### *Mary's First Marriage to John Doring*

First, she married John B. Doring,<sup>223</sup> [when and where?]. Mary must have been very young when she married Doring, as she married her second husband when she was 20. John is buried [Need tombstone info. Barb will send.] in Wright City, Missouri. They had a daughter Annie. Annie married Julian Thomas, who sold stained glass church windows, and lived in St. Louis. He was a salesman for Kokomo Art Glass Co., Kokomo, Indiana. They had two children, Marvin, and Alice

---

<sup>220</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December, 2000.

<sup>221</sup> Mary A. Martin death certificate, registration district no 104, file no 421, primary registration district no. 3008, registered no. 18, Bureau of Vital Statistics of the Missouri Department of Health, Jefferson, Missouri. She died of tuberculosis. Her occupation was "housekeeper." Her birthday was given as 1 April 1860. This conflicts with the March, 1859 information in the 1900 census. The information was given by Mary's daughter Mamie. Her father was John B. Gregory, born in Missouri. Mamie did not know the maiden name or birthplace of Mary's mother. Mary's tombstone says she was born in 1861, an error.

<sup>222</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000. She lived in at least one foster home.

<sup>223</sup> Doring cemetery records, e-mail message from Barbara Zimmerman, town clerk, Wright City, Missouri, to author 27 December 2000. He is buried next to Mary A. Martin. Mary was interred 17 January 1913. Plot owed by Mary Doring Burge. Mamie Burge paid for this plot for many years. That must be how the name Burge was added to the cemetery records.

Virginia who married a Cowling. Marvin served in the military in the Philippines.

224

*Mary's Second Marriage to Samuel Groshong*

Mary then married Samuel Jeremiah Groshong, 11 January 1880 in Lincoln County, Missouri. He was forty-four and she was twenty. Samuel was born 2 August 1836 in Missouri and died 19 May 1917. He is buried in Highland Prairie, Lincoln County, Missouri.<sup>225</sup> They must have divorced since Mary was married to Dick Martin by 1889.

They had a daughter, Callie B. Groshong, nicknamed "Tad", born in November, 1880.<sup>226</sup> Callie married Bruce Stickley and they lived in Jacksonville, Illinois. Aileen Wright said that is how her mother wound up in Jacksonville. She moved there to live with her sister Callie. Bruce was a traveling man. They had a son Kenneth, who died in fire in Detroit, Michigan sometime in the 1950s.<sup>227</sup>

---

<sup>224</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

<sup>225</sup> Ancestral record..... He had been married twice before.

<sup>226</sup> John R. Martin household, 1900 U.S. census, Audrain County, Missouri, population schedule, Salt River Township, enumeration district 13, supervisor's district 150, sheet 11, dwelling 226, family 228. Dick owned his own home, and had a mortgage. He was a school teacher. Callie was a dressmaker.

<sup>227</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

Living with Dick, Mary Gregory was listed in the 1900 census as the mother of four children, of whom three were living. Two daughters lived with her, Mamie and Callie who was a dressmaker.<sup>228</sup> Annie was probably married and gone.

In 1898, Dick and Mary executed two deeds, selling some of the land he inherited from his father to his sister and giving some to his nephew Ernest Lee Childs.<sup>229</sup>

Mary A. Gregory died 24 January 1913, age fifty-two, in Callaway County, in Fulton.<sup>230</sup> <sup>231</sup> She is buried in nearby Wright City, Missouri. Her grave is next to her first husband.<sup>232</sup> <sup>233</sup> When filling out her death certificate, her daughter Mamie knew Mary's father, but did not know the name of Mary's mother.

Mary's obituary read:

---

<sup>228</sup> 1900 U.S. census, Audrain County, Missouri, population schedule, Salt River Township, enumeration district 13, supervisor's district 150, sheet 11, dwelling 226, family 228.

<sup>229</sup> Fauquier County Deed Book 89: 356, clerk's office, Warrenton, Virginia.. Deed is dated 16 May 1898. He sells to his sister Mildred part of the land he inherited from his brother George. 21 November 1898, he deeds "Lot 2, woodland" he also received from his brother George to his nephew, Ernest Childs (Fauquier County Deed Book 90: 104). He is now domiciled in Audrian County, Missouri.

<sup>230</sup> Mary E. Martin obituary, Fulton Missouri Telegraph, 31 January 1913, page 1, column 5. An almost identical obituary was in the Fulton Gazette, 31 January 1913, p. 8, column 4. This last obituary confirms she was born in Warren County, Illinois.

<sup>231</sup> Mary A. Martin, Missouri death certificate, registration district no. 104, file no. 421, primary registration district no. 3008, registered no. 18.

<sup>232</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000. Mary owned a cemetery lot there.

<sup>233</sup> Tombstone. "Mary A. Martin wife of J. R. Martin 1861-1913." Email from Barbara Zimmerman, Town Clerk, Wright City, Missouri, February 7, 2001.

**Mrs. J. R. Martin Dead. Wife of Veteran School Teacher of Callaway County Dies of Tuberculosis.** Mrs. Mary E. Martin, wife of Prof. J. R. Martin, the oldest school teacher in the Kingdom of Callaway died at her home on Bluff street in this city at 5 o'clock Saturday afternoon. The funeral services were held at the residence, conducted by Rev. T. E. Winter of the First Christian Church, at 2:30 o'clock Sunday afternoon. The remains were shipped to Wright City, Mo., for burial Mrs. Martin was 52 years old. She leaves three daughters, Mrs. Bruce Stickley of Jacksonville, Illinois, Mrs. Julian Thomas of St. Louis and Miss Mayme Martin of Fulton, her husband and other relatives and friends to mourn her death.<sup>234</sup>

*Dick and Mary's Daughter Mamie*

Mamie Martin was born in 18 March 1890 in Wright City, Warren County, Missouri.<sup>235</sup> She married a widower, James Burge, in Jacksonville, Illinois on 21 January 1915.<sup>236 237 238</sup> She would be 25 in a few weeks. He was 45. Neither Mamie or James had middle names.<sup>239</sup>

---

<sup>234</sup> Fulton Missouri Telegraph, 31 January 1913.

<sup>235</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

<sup>236</sup> Morgan County Register of Marriages, page 315, county clerk's office, Jacksonville, Illinois.

<sup>237</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000. Corrected month from February to January.

<sup>238</sup> Fauquier County Will Book 47: 418. Mentions niece Mamie.

<sup>239</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

James was born 23 August, 1869 in Jacksonville.<sup>240</sup> He was the son of John Burge, who immigrated from England,<sup>241</sup> <sup>242</sup> and Sarah Neal.<sup>243</sup> James first married in 1903, Hattie Swisher who died in 1904,<sup>244</sup> in childbirth.<sup>245</sup> They had a son, James Burge, Jr. who lived in Tuscola, in 1962.<sup>246</sup> James, Jr., had a son, David Burge.<sup>247</sup>

In the 1920 census, James, Mamie and their daughter, Aileen Linn, are living in Jacksonville. James owns a grocery store.

---

<sup>240</sup> James Burge obituary, *Jacksonville Daily Journal*, Thursday May 24, 1962. This source says he was born in Jacksonville.

<sup>241</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

<sup>242</sup> James Burge household, 1920 U.S. census, Morgan County, Illinois, populations schedule, Jacksonville City, enumeration district 135, supervisor's district 12, sheet4-A 354, dwelling 94, family 98. They lived at 591 South Church Street. He was a proprietor of a grocery store. They lived next to William H. Burge, apparently his brother, who worked as a salesman for James.

<sup>243</sup> Morgan County Register of Marriages, page 315.

<sup>244</sup> \_\_\_\_\_ *Jacksonville Daily Journal*, Thursday May 24, 1962. page and column?

<sup>245</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

<sup>246</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000. Aileen last saw her half brother at her father's funeral. She has not talked to him since.

<sup>247</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

James Burge died 23 May 1962 at the grand age of 92. His wife Mamie Martin Burge died six years later, 16 September 1968, aged 79, six months before her (unknown to her) sister Bettie. James and Mamie are buried in Diamond Grove Cemetery, in Jacksonville, Illinois.<sup>248</sup>

James' obituary reads:

**Veteran Grocer, James Burge, Dies; Funeral Saturday.** James Burge, veteran grocer in Jacksonville, who retired in 1960 at the age of 90, died at 2:25 a.m. Wednesday at Passavant hospital where he had been a patient since May 8<sup>th</sup>. Mr. Burge



*Mamie Martin Burge as a lovely young woman*

resided at 1022 West College avenue. He owned and operated a grocery store on the corner of South Church and Anna streets from 1907 to 1960, having started in the retail grocery business in 1903. A lifelong resident he was born in Jacksonville August 23, 1869, the son of John and Sarah Neal Burge. He was the last of his

---

<sup>248</sup> [Anonymous], *Diamond Grove Cemetery*, (Reprinted by Jacksonville Area Genealogical & Historical Society, Jacksonville, Illinois). This record give death dates of 26 May 1962 for James and 20 September 1968 for Mamie. These are probably interment dates. Their daughter Aileen gave dates shown.

immediate family. He was married in 1903 to Hattie Swisher and she died in 1904. On Jan. 21, 1915, he married Mamie martin who survives with a daughter, Aileen, wife of Roy A. Wright, Jacksonville and a son by the first union, James Burge of Tuscola. A grandson David Burge also survives. Mr. Burge held membership for over 50 years in the IOOF Lodge No. 4 and the Knights of Pythias Lodge of Jacksonville. He united with the Methodist church at an early age. The body was taken to Williamson Funeral Home where the family will meet friends 7:30 to 9 p.m. Friday. Funeral services will be held at 2 p.m. Saturday at the funeral home with Rev. Gerald Miller of First Christian church officiating. Interment will be in Diamond Grove cemetery.<sup>249</sup>

Mamie's obituary reads:

**Mrs. Burge, 79, Dies Tuesday, Funeral Friday.** Mrs. Mamie Burge, 79, widow of James Burge and resident of many years at 1022 West College avenue, died late Tuesday night at Modern Care Nursing Home. Mrs. Burge was born March 18, 1890 in Wright City Missouri, the daughter of John and Mary Gregory Martin. She was married to James Burge Jan. 21, 1915, and he preceded her in death May 23, 1962. Surviving is a daughter, Aileen, wife of Roy A. Wright of this city, and one niece, Mrs. Alice Cowling, Kansas City Missouri. Two Sisters preceded Mrs. Burge in

---

<sup>249</sup> James Burge obituary, Jacksonville Daily Journal, Jacksonville, Illinois, Thursday 24 May, 1962. A funeral notice was in the Jacksonville Daily Journal 25 May 1962.

death.<sup>250</sup> The deceased was a member of Central Christian church. The remains were taken to Williamson Funeral Home, where the family will meet friends 7 to 9 p.m. Thursday. Funeral services will be at 3:30 pm Friday at the funeral home with Rev. William K. Sturgess officiating. Interment will be in Diamond Grove cemetery.<sup>251</sup>

*Dick and Mary's Granddaughter Aileen*

Mamie and James' only child, Aileen Linn Burge, was born 19 November, 1915. in Jacksonville. She married Roy Andrew Wright, 26 August, 1951 in her parents' home in Jacksonville. He was 36, she was 35.

He was the son of Roy and Florence Griffith Wright.<sup>252</sup> Roy was born 5 September, 1914 in Wrights, Green County, Illinois. He died 13 January, 2000, in Jacksonville, Illinois, aged 85. He is buried in Diamond Grove Cemetery in Jacksonville.

Roy was a nurse. Aileen was a medical technician. **[Discuss with Aileen.]**

---

<sup>250</sup> According to Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, the reference is to her half-sisters from her mother's earlier marriages, not her two half-sisters from her father's earlier marriage to Jemima Gilmore. This lends weight to the notion of estrangement with Dick Martin's children of his first marriage.

<sup>251</sup> Mamie Martin obituary, Jacksonville Journal, Jacksonville, Ill., no date. Copy provided by Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright.

<sup>252</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000. They are buried in Hickory Grove Cemetery, Wrights, Illinois. Wrights Illinois is about twenty-five miles south of Jacksonville. Wrights was named after Roy Wright's family.

Aileen visited Fauquier County with her mother when she was only three years old. She remembered visiting the Martin Family Cemetery. She saw John Martin's tombstone and noted that Billy Bowen's grave was outside the stone wall containing the other graves. She also remembers visiting her cousin, Ernest Lee Childs and her mother's Aunts Betty Bowen and Minnie Martin.

In 2002 Dick Martin's granddaughter, Aileen Linn Burge Wright, aged 85, lives in Jacksonville, Illinois. She has no children. She is the last of Dick Martin's line through his wife Mary Gregory.

### ***Recognition of His Teaching Career***

At age 68, in 1910, Dick Martin was recognized for his many years of teaching in the Fulton area and was the subject in a local newspaper article:

**PEDAGOGUE 44 YEARS FULTON TEACHER'S RECORD.** Fulton, Mo., Oct. 8-J. R. Martin, familiarly known as "Uncle Dick" Martin, is the oldest school-teacher in Callaway County. Mr. Martin has been at the pedagogic game since 1866, and doesn't allow such a small thing as 68 years to rest so heavily on his shoulders that he cannot administer to the wants of Young America five days in every school week of the year. He began teaching in Virginia in 1866, having charge of private schools for two terms of ten months each. He then carne to Callaway County. Since that time he has taught in Callaway, Boone, Audrain, Montgomery, Warren and Lincoln counties dividing his time almost equally among the six counties. He is at present teaching his fifth term at the Craig School, four and one-half miles north of Fulton, four of which have been consecutive. For several years Mr. Martin had a worthy contender for first honors as being the oldest teacher in the person of J. A.

Padgett of New Bloomfield, who retired last year. The two men are practically of the same age and taught schools in adjoining districts in Warren County in 1870. Since then, however, they have been' widely separated in their fields of labor. Mr. Martin makes his home in Fulton and spends his leisure time in keeping up his acquaintances in this city. He has kept pace with the new wrinkles in the educational lines as the years rolled by.<sup>253</sup>

### ***Dick's Pension Application***

On 23 June 1913, at age 72, a few months after the death of his wife Mary, Dick applied for a Confederate veteran's pension. He was living in Fulton at the time. He got a pension of ten dollars a month.<sup>254</sup><sup>255</sup> His application was accompanied by the following affidavit:

We the undersigned, surviving members of the "Black Horse Company" having learned that our comrade, J. Richard Martin is now a resident of Hatton, Callaway County, Missouri, in a community of friends with whom he is naturally solicitous to establish himself as a soldier of the Confederate States, hereby certify that we are

---

<sup>253</sup> "Pedagogue 44 Years Fulton Teacher's Record," undated clipping, but hand marked 1910, from unidentified newspaper, in family papers of Lucy Ann Martin Smith (Mrs. Nathaniel D. Smith) of Owasso, Missouri; inherited 1969 by her son N. DeWitt, Jr., of Siloam Springs, Arkansas. Now in possession of the author.

<sup>254</sup> "Confederates Gets Pensions", *Callaway Gazette*, 26 September 1913. Lists J. Richard Martin of Fulton. "Each will receive \$10 a month." [Get Callaway web site for citation.](#)

familiar with career as a member of our troop, and his services as a private from the war's beginning to its close; welcome an opportunity to attest that he was among the foremost of our comrades for courage, enthusiasm in the performance of duties and in cheerful endurance of the perils and hardships in field and camp, we further know that his manly bearing under circumstances, encouraged others to similar bravery in battle, fortitude on the march and under all dangers and trials.

His two brothers Robert E. and George W. Martin, constituted a trio unsurpassed in all the qualities of patriotic soldiers and they were together so distinguished for Knighthood, it was impracticable to discriminate between them.

When the Rifle was sent by a distinguished Englishman and admirer of the Confederates to be presented to the most splendid soldier of the "Black Horse", it might have been given with justice to J. Richard Martin as well as to his older brother.

---

<sup>255</sup> Pension application, State of Missouri. He states that he was "shot through the wrist and in breast and above hip." He took part in the battles of "Bull Run, Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, Wilderness, 7 days fight around Richmond, \_\_\_\_\_, Harpers Ferry, Haws Shop, Appomattox, Gettysburg."

We can further say the entire Martin family, consisting of father, mother and three daughters, enlisted not less zealously, than the three brothers and had all the families of the Confederacy imitated their splendid example the Stars and Bars would have been a victorious standard.

Signed: James Keith, James Vass, M. M. Green, S. S. Jones, Jno. G. Beale, C. E. Holtzclaw, R. A. Hart, John K. Taliaferro, Hugh Hamilton..



*Dick Martin in his later years*

## ***The Last Years***

In 1915, Dick developed heart trouble and, with his wife Mary two years dead, he decided he wanted to spend his last days at home in Fauquier County. On the way, he stopped to visit his daughter Mamie, who took him to a doctor. The doctor told Mamie not to let him go to Virginia because she would probably never see him again.<sup>256</sup>

---

<sup>256</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

He stayed with his sister Minnie and her servant and companion, Susan Moore, at his former residence on the "Home Farm." One day, Minnie looked at him lying in bed, and said to Susan, "he looks very peaceful." Susan replied, "yes, he just died."<sup>257</sup> Dick is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery, grave unmarked.<sup>258</sup>

Dick Martin's obituary in the Fauquier Democrat paper read:

. . . died at the home of his sister Miss Minnie Martin of near Casanova, 25<sup>259</sup> January, 1916, and was buried the following day at the Martin home, now owned by W. M. Groves and S. W. Strickler.<sup>260</sup>

Services were conducted at the home and also at the grave by the Rev. Mr. Marshall. Dick Martin, son of Honest John Martin, was one of the famous Martin brothers, members of the Black Horse Cavalry, Bob and Josh having both preceded him to the grave.

He was in the 75th year of his age. He had made his home for a number of years in the State of Missouri, and returned about six months ago to the home of his sister, Miss Minnie, in impaired health, to spend the remainder of his life in his dear old home.

---

<sup>257</sup> Interview, Aileen Lynn (Burge) Wright, 2 December 2000.

<sup>258</sup> John Richard Martin obituary, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper, in collection of John K. Gott, Fauquier Heritage and Preservation Foundation, Marshall, Virginia..

<sup>259</sup> This date is an error. The date of 5 January is supported by other sources.

<sup>260</sup> This is the Licking Run Farm of Honest John Martin.

He is survived by two sisters, Miss Minnie Martin [Mildred] and Mrs. Wm. A. Bowen [his twin, Bettie]. He will always be remembered by the survivors of his comrades as one of the bravest of the brave. Comrade.<sup>261</sup>

Another obituary noted:

Richard Martin Dead. Departed this life on January 5<sup>th</sup>, 1916, at the residence of his sister Miss Minnie Martin, near Casanova Fauquier Co, Va. J Richard Martin in the 75<sup>th</sup> year of his age, after a protracted illness which he bore with patience and fortitude.

Another true and brave Confederate Soldier has responded to the roll call of the Spirit Land, and the few survivors who were associated with him as a soldier boy, and in his early life after the war, before leaving his native county to seek a home in the far West, are called to mourn the loss of a noble comrade, congenial associate, and one whose friendship never failed.

Dick Martin (as he was familiarly known) was the last of a Trio of Brothers, whose devotion to the Southern Cause, and true courage as Soldiers, if equaled, could not be excelled, as was attested by the confidence reposed in them by their officers, the admiration and esteem of their comrades, and the dread and respect of their armed foes, for it could be truly said of them, that where duty called they were prompt to obey, and in the midst of conflict where the steel flashed brightest, and the bullets flew thickest, there were the Martin boys to be found.

---

<sup>261</sup> John Richard Martin obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Saturday, January 22, 1916.

Dick enlisted in the Black Horse Cavalry at the commencement of the war, was afterward attached to the 4<sup>th</sup> Va. Cavalry as Company H., he served actively in the ranks, until disabled by a severe wound.

For a short period he was in the Mercantile business at Rappahannock Sta. after the close of the war, but a devastated country afforded very little promise for a livelihood, and he sought the fertile, and prosperous State of Missouri, where he turned his attention to the education of the young, and stood well as a teacher, until his health failed, and about six months ago returned to the home of his birth, childhood, and early manhood to die, and be laid to rest with his parents, and those of his loved ones who preceded him.

It was the writer's pleasure to spend the day with him at the quaint old family home-stead which has undergone few changes in appearance since the war; he was reminded of the unsurpassed hospitality dispensed at that home, where no Southern Soldier was ever turned empty away (though the supply of provision was very scant) or refused shelter under its welcome roof.

In closing, the most comforting and important thing to be considered, is that he trusted in his God for the Salvation of his Soul, and the hope that his earthly suffering (which was for a season) has been changed to that of comfort, rest, peace, and happiness which Heaven alone can supply.

May the memory of the Patriotic Old Parents ever cherished and Heaven's richest blessing rest and abide with the surviving Sisters (who sacrificed so much, and

experienced such hardships in a country over run by the enemy's of those they loved, and sustained in every extremity) is the prayer Of a Comrade.<sup>262</sup>

Thus, with Dick's death, fifty-one years after the war, the last of the Martin boys was gone. Eighty-six years after his death, his two grandchildren, age 86 and 97 in 2002, neither of whom have surviving children, are the last of his line.

---

<sup>262</sup> John Richard Martin obituary, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper clipping, in family papers of Aileen (Burge) Wright (Mrs. Roy A. Wright) of Jacksonville, Illinois; now owned by the author.



**10**

## **George Washington “Josh” Martin**

“Josh” was the youngest of the Martin boys, and was named after his father’s brother. He was born 2 February 1844, and died 24 February 1896 at the early age of 52.<sup>263</sup> He is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery. There is no record in Fauquier County of Josh Martin ever marrying.

When the war began, he was only seventeen. But, a week after his eighteenth birthday, he joined the Black Horse.

Alexander Hunter said of him:

“Josh was...a born soldier. He was a blooded game-cock with the gaffles on, and though of sweet disposition and gentle manners, in action he was as



---

<sup>263</sup> George W. Martin tombstone, Martin Family Cemetery, Hurletown, Fauquier County, Virginia. There is no record of his death in Fauquier County court records.

dangerous as a 'Sans Coulette in an emute' holding a barricade against the Municipal guard."<sup>264</sup>

### ***The Lt. John Meigs Affair***

What we know most about Josh Martin was his involvement in an incident that lead to one of the most notorious Union crimes of the entire war. The wholesale devastation of the valley during 1864, in violation of international rules of law, is well known. Grant wrote to Sheridan: "Give the enemy no rest ...carry off stock of all descriptions, and negroes, so as to prevent any further planning."<sup>265</sup>

Josh and another Black Horseman, F. M. Campbell, were in a firefight that resulted in the death of Lt. John Rogers Meigs, son of Union Quartermaster Gen. Montgomery Meigs and a member of General Philip Sheridan's staff. Enraged, Sheridan ordered every residence within five miles of the incident to be burned to the ground. And they were.

One of his former commanding officers wrote about the Meigs incident:

During this campaign [Early's Valley campaign, August, 1864]...George W. Martin and [F. M.] Campbell, of the Black Horse, with a member of the First Virginia Regiment, were returning from a scout late in the evening. It was raining,

---

<sup>264</sup> Hunter, *Women of the Debatable Land*, 668.

<sup>265</sup> Steven Z. Starr, *The Union Cavalry in the Civil War*, 3 volumes (New Your: Alfred A. Knoph, Inc., 1981), 2.

and the soldiers had their oilcloths thrown over their shoulders, which in a great measure, concealed their uniform.

On looking back, they saw three mounted men coming up behind them, whom they inferred were Union soldiers, as they were in the rear of Sheridan's forces. Drawing and cocking their pistols, they rode slowly, that they might be overtaken.

The Federals -for such the party were - had had their suspicions aroused, and also prepared for the fight. As soon as they came alongside of them, the scouts wheeled and demanded a surrender, when they were fired upon by their opponents.

They proved to be Lieutenant Meiggs of Sheridan's staff and two orderlies. Lieutenant Meiggs' shot passed through Martin's body, but he braced himself, returned the fire, and killed Meiggs.

The other two scouts captured one of the orderlies. The other made his escape, and reported to Sheridan that his party had been bushwhacked, who, in retaliation, ordered the burning of every house in a radius of five miles.

Joshua Martin was carried to the house of a farmer, where he was tenderly nursed until sufficiently recovered to return to his home in Fauquier.

After the war closed, General Meiggs, believing that his son had been assassinated, sought to have Martin arrested and tried by a court-martial for murder; but when the facts, as above stated, were certified to him by Captain A. D. Payne, the matter was dropped, for Lieutenant Meiggs had been slain in open and legitimate war.

George W. Martin is now at home, a prosperous agriculturist, and one of the most respected citizens in the community in which he resides.<sup>266</sup>

Add material from Billy Yank and Johnny Reb book by Hunter, p. 670.

Add info from “The Burning.”

Cite Minnie’s will which describes

incident.

[Add story from BH UDC newspaper clip.]

His obituary in the *Warrenton True Index* newspaper read:<sup>267 268</sup>

**“Bravest of the Brave”.** The Black Horse Camp mourns the loss of one of its most distinguished member, Geo. W. Martin. “Josh Martin” was no ordinary soldier. He was the junior of three brothers who served through the war as members of the Black Horse Company conspicuous for their bravery and fidelity to duty. The most

---

<sup>266</sup> Scott, “The Black Horse Cavalry,” 612.

<sup>267</sup> “Monument to G. W. Martin,” *The True Index*, Warrenton, Virginia , 9 October 1897, page 2, column 2.

<sup>268</sup> The Black Horse Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, *The Black Horse Troop of Fauquier County*, (Warrenton, Virginia: privately printed, 1972), 14. This is a booklet of unidentified newspaper clippings collected over the years by the chapter. The text in the booklet misidentifies Josh as the brother that received the rifle for being the “bravest man in Lee’s army.”

famous of Napoleon's old guard could not have exceeded them in gallantry and boldness when in action. Courage, truth and honesty was an inheritance from the best of fathers known to all of his associates as "HONEST John martin" and no man in any age more richly deserved that sobriquet.

In the four years of war, "Josh Martin" was called on to discharge every duty of a soldier, and was never wanting, in the sabre charge, as a skirmisher, dismounted and fighting as infantry, courier at Head-quarters, or scout in the lines of the enemy, his good sense and intrepid nerve made him a marked man.

It would be of doubtful taste, in this obituary notice, to attempt a recital of his many deeds of daring: but the writer has often seen him in times of danger bear himself as none could, except with undaunted courage and a thorough conviction that he was contending for a righteous cause. On one of his scouts he and two comrades met a like number of the enemy—one, a Lieutenant [Lieut. John Meigs] whom he thought, on demand, had surrendered, but the Lieut. fired, striking him just below the right nipple, the ball passing out on the left side of his back-bond. How any human could have stood such a shock is a mystery to one not versed in anatomy, but his extraordinary will-power enabled him to sit erect, return his assailant's fire, killing him at once, and then rode eight or nine miles to get out of the lines of the enemy or where he could remain in comparative safety until his wound would permit his reaching and receiving the care of fond ones at home. Several of our Company were school-mates of that Union Lieutenant and deeply lamented his death; but it was the fate of war.

In civil life the same traits of character which distinguished him as a soldier endeared him to all with whom he came in contact, which was evidenced by the large concourse of neighbors of all conditions, white and colored, male and female,

young and old, at his funeral Wednesday, where one and all joined his grief-stricken sisters in sorrow for their loss.

The floral offerings from his “Camp of Confederate Veterans” and individual friends, were many and beautiful—among them several large and tastefully arranged wreaths. The Captain who first led the Black Horse Company into the Confederate service and afterwards became the distinguished cavalry General W. H. Payne, brought as his offering a beautiful pillow of roses inscribed with colored violets “The bravest of the brave,” which tells how much such high authority appreciated our departed friend.

Rev. Mr. Mead of the Episcopal church read its burial service. The Black Horse Camp acted as pall bearers, Comrades Chas. H. Gordon, Wm. L. Ficklin, W. A. Smoot, Jos. G. Hunton, T. M. Lomax, W. H. Lewis, B. P. Green and L. D. Beale were detailed as casket-bearers. These were immediately followed by about thirty veterans in the charge of Commander M. M. Green. At the head of the company was the old battle flag, furled and in mourning draped, borne by comrade Geo. C. Ransdall, who as one of the 4<sup>th</sup> Virginia Color Guard, had carried it in many a hard-fought battle. After placing the flowers on the grave and the completion of the burial service, his comrades and friends separated for their respective homes, with sorrowing hearts and deep sympathy with his distress relatives. Peace to his ashes.

G.<sup>269</sup>

---

<sup>269</sup> *The Warrenton True Index, 29 February 1896.*

The women of Warrenton collected funds for a marker for Josh Martin's grave. About a year and one half after his death, it was dedicated in the Martin Family Cemetery on 9 October 1897. Crowded around the grave were many of his old comrades and the ladies who raised the funds for the monument. The *Warrenton True Index* reported the ceremony in some detail:

MONUMENT TO G. W. MARTIN. Pursuant to public notice the Black Horse Camp met at the grave of their late Comrade, Geo. W. Martin, on the 9<sup>th</sup> inst. To be present at the unveiling of a monument to his memory.

Commander M. M. Green called the camp to order, after which a most impressive prayer was offered by Rev. Mr. Mead.

The prayer was followed by a brief address by Commander Green which is annexed:

REMARKS BY COMMANDER GREEN.

In recalling to memory our Comrade, he stands before me, not as the conspicuously gallant soldier, which he undoubtedly was, but as the man and friend. JOSH MARTIN was, in many respects, a remarkable and splendid character. He instinctively knew right from wrong and had the manliness to uphold what he thought right against all opposition. He disliked selfishness, cowardice and the fawning upon those advanced to high places as much as any man I ever knew. To those he regarded his friends, he was as gentle as a woman. Often in gloomy moments when recounting my many short-comings, I have been consoled by the thought that I could not be wholly bad and have retained through years of intimate association the unswerving friendship and confidence of JOSH MARTIN.

In speaking for the Black Horse Camp, which regrets its inability to erect suitable monuments to all of its gallant dead and unwilling to do so for some and not for others just as worthy, to avoid invidious distinctions, has not contributed to the erection of any, returns its thanks to the individuals who suggested and pressed to a successful completion the tribute the unveiling of which assembles us to-day.

The veil being removed comrade Alexander Hunter delivered the following address:

ADDRESS BY COMRADE HUNTER.

My friends and comrades of the Black Horse: We have met here to-day to dedicate this monolith to the memory of George W. Martin, whom you admired and esteemed in life, and sorrowed in his death.

There are monuments in every city in the South to dignify her admirals, her generals and men of high renown. This is right and proper, but we are here to honor one who wore a saber by his side, a carbine swung across his back, a private in the ranks, who carried his own horse and was always foremost in the advance, and the hindmost in the retreat.

Those famous heroes of the South who have their last resting place marked by columns of bronze or shaft of marble may have been great in name and fame, but none of them excelled in courage, in truth, in fidelity, the private soldier who slumbers beneath this stone.

- "Enough of merit has each honored name,  
To shine untarnished on the rolls of fame,
- And add new illustre to the historic page."

This simple shaft is not an eulogistic epitaph; his renown is graven deeper than if cut in marble or lettered in monumental brass, for his gallant exploits during the

war, and his kindness and courtesy in peace are engraved on the tablets of our memory, and they will descend from father to son, and as long as this proud Commonwealth exists, and the boundaries of old Fauquier remain intact, so long will the name of private Josh Martin of the Black Horse Cavalry be a household word.

For a score of years it has been my privilege to be his close and trusted friend, and I know that in every phase of life he as borne himself as Froissart's Chronicle<sup>270</sup> has it, " Like a knight of old, with heart of gold."

I have seen him in the dark, cold wintry bivouac, where the dread monotony and semi-starvation made the best among us dissatisfied, discontented, and almost hopeless, yet I never heard a murmur from his lips—he was always bright, ever cheerful in the darkest hours.

I have seen him in the dashing charge, when, as Gen. Phil. Kearny said at Seven Pints, "Go anywhere Colonel, and you will find lovely fighting along the whole line"

I have seen him in the advance dismounted, his eyes blazing with the flame of battle, and his voice rising above the rattling fire of carbines, cheering his comrades

---

<sup>270</sup> Charles W. Eliot, *The Harvard Classics*, "Chronicle And Romance Froissart-Malory-Holinshed, With Introductions And Notes", (New York, P F Collier & Son Company). Volume 35. Jean Froissart, the most representative of the chroniclers of the later Middle Ages, was born at Valenciennes in 1337. ... it is as the supreme chronicler of the later age of chivalry that he lives. "... Wherever I went I enquired of old knights and squires who had shared in deeds of arms, and could speak with authority concerning them, and also spoke with heralds in order to verify and corroborate all that was told me. In this way I gathered noble facts for my history, and as long as I live, I shall, by the grace of God, continue to do this, for the more I labour at this the more pleasure I have, and I trust that the gentle knight who loves arms will be nourished on such noble fare, and accomplish still more."

on; and I have seen him stop, and with a pitying tenderness give his canteen to a wounded enemy lying in his path; and this much can be said, that among the many prisoners he has captured on his scouting expeditions, he never ill-treated one by word or deed.

We can say of his as of Shakespeare's Claudio, " He hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age, doing in the temper of a lamb the feats of a lion.

But better than this, I have witnessed his home life; and that after all is the true test of a man's character. It is only people that possess firmness who can possess true gentleness; and Josh Martin was essentially gentle, kind and lovable. He was unselfish, and he possessed in a marked degree that first attribute of a gentleman 'a conscientious consideration for others.'

He loved the Black Horsemen, and if every little act of kindness he has done us could have been marked by a stone and that stone cast on this spot, there would be a mound so massive, so broad and so high, that would rise toward Heaven like the pinnacled crag of the Blue Ridge. We returned his affection and so we gather here today to perform the last rites, and standing by his grave declare that nature never fashioned a braver, gentler, manlier man.

We cannot give our loving tribute to our dead comrade without speaking of him from whom he inherited his many lovable qualities, for "like father, like son." After all I question if the real heroes of the late war were not the great, brave, patient people; their mental agony was harder to bear than our physical pain, and watching, waiting and hoping with breaking hearts for the loved ones facing death was a trial to all, but to those families within the enemy's lines, cut off from all communication with the outside world, as was Fauquier county, the experience filled the cup of their adversity to the brim.

How well our old host John Martin, his devoted wife and daughters bore the ordeal we all know. It was Theodore Parker who wrote, "The most useful man is the greatest." Then judging by that standard John Martin was great indeed, for every hour of his life was jeweled with some good deed to his fellow man. But, it was to the Black Horse Cavalry that the tendrils of his heart clung so lovingly and tenaciously. In their successes he rejoiced, in their deaths he sorrowed as a father for his son. And to his eldest born, the daring fearless Robert, that the ideal type of a southern trooper, the pride of old Fauquier in the days agone, he too has left a name that is immortal.

And now my comrades of the Black Horse, survivors of many a hard fought field, the years have rooled on, and age has whitened our locks and bowed our forms, our faces are turned towards the setting sun and we have borne well our part in the days when the greatest bloodiest war the world ever saw rocked this continent from centre to circumference, and after, in the last words of the immortal Jackson, we shall "Cross the river and rest under the shade of the trees," if friends, relatives and comrades can stand over our last resting place and say about our dead comrade "There rests a man;" then indeed we shall not have lived in vain

The ladies of the neighborhood then advanced and strewed the grave with flowers

RESOLUTIONS OF CONDOLENCE. On motion the following resolutions were unanimously passed and signed by every comrade present and ordered to be transmitted to Gen. Wm. H. Payne.

Whereas the veteran survivors of the Black Horse Cavalry having this day assembled to honor the memory of one of our comrades, learn with unfeigned sorrow and regret that our Comrade and Commander [Gen. Wm. H. Payne] is absent because of the loss of his cherished and beloved daughter, therefore.

*Be it Resolved*, That we, his comrades in arms, tender him our heart-felt sympathy in his bereavement, and from our hearts we desire to him, in this our of anguish and sorrow, our hope that though death has claimed its fairest flower, yet may the memory of the devoted love she bore him in life be his stay and comfort.

Geo. C Ransdell,	Wm. L. Ficklin,
Boliver Ward,	T. A. Fant,
Alex Hunter,	James Vass,
M. M. Green,	T. Ritchie Green,
R. C. Florance,	W. A. Caynor,
W. H. Lewis	J. E. Armstrong,
G. C. Florance,	L. D. Beale,
R. A. Hart,	C. E. Holtzclaw,
S. S. Jones,	Jno. R. Turner,
F. R. Duke,	J. G. Hunton,
G. W. Clark,	S. M. G. Beale,
Jno. G. Beale,	Wm. A. Bowen,
Hugh Hamilton	Dan'l J. Payne,
T. N. Lomax,	T. C. Pilcher,
J. T. Riley.	

His grave monument reads: <sup>271</sup>

*The most famous of the Black Horsemen*

*The lamb of the household*

*The lion in battle*

*He looked the foe in the face*

With his brother Bob long dead, and his brother Dick long removed to Missouri, it was Josh who became the symbol in Fauquier of the achievements and fame of the three Martin brothers. Josh's twenty-six years survival of his brother Bob eclipsed

---

<sup>271</sup> George W. Martin tombstone, Martin Family Cemetery, Fauquier County, Virginia.

the memory of the “bravest” and, at Josh's death, it was he who was hailed as “the most famous” of the Black horsemen.

But, in a bitter-sweet last line on Josh's tombstone, Fauquier remembered all three: “*The Martin boys the pride of old Fauquier.*”

**[Add photograph of monument.]**



## 11

# Epilogue

### ***A Family Fades***

This has been the tale of a family famous in their time but whose memory has faded. After the war, the family slowly dissolved. Honest John and his wife Susan survived the war only about ten years

Bob was killed accidentally soon after the war, and left no surviving children.

Minnie and Josh died unmarried.

### ***Three left children***

Margaret, who married James H. Childs, died young, but left Ernest Lee Childs who was raised by his aunt Minnie. His son Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. lives in Fauquier and has a son, Dale Strother Childs. Ernest Lee Jr.'s sister, Agnes Conway Childs Nixdorff, is dead, but her three sons and their families survive.

Bettie, who married Billy Bowen, left one adopted child, Malcom Bowen. His descendants live in Remington.

Dick moved to Missouri and had three daughters. But, Dick's surviving grandchildren have no surviving children.

Thus, Honest John's three Black Horse Cavalrymen sons' left no male children to carry the Martin name.

Honest John's daughters left children whose descendants are in Fauquier and Illinois. Thus, this branch of the Martin family has petered out and will be carried on through the allied families of descendants of his two daughters, Margaret and Bettie.

### ***History Dimmed***

The historical memory of the family and its famous brothers has also dimmed.

The "bravest man in Lee's army" is only a footnote.

The old hymn says, "Now let us praise famous men." Perhaps one day we can recover "the pride of old Fauquier," and find a way to remember Bob Martin, "the bravest man in Lee's army," and his dauntless brothers.

Until then, "the Martin boys the pride of old Fauquier", once famous throughout Fauquier and the entire Confederate army, lie hidden from view and memory, denied to us and our posterity, to our everlasting loss.

However, we are a people ...a community. A community cannot afford to throw its heroes away. But, if we have, it is our duty as witnesses for the future to collect them again for the sake of our children and ourselves, and if necessary, bone by bone.



## Appendix 1

### **The Bowen Family**

Honest John Martin's daughter Susan Elizabeth Martin married William A, Bowen, Jr. His grandfather was James M. Bowen.<sup>272</sup> The Bowen family had long been established in Virginia. We start with the fifth generation of Bowens. This sketch only covers a few highlights of Billy Bowen's family, mainly his father and three uncles.

#### ***James M. Bowen***

James M. Bowen was born 7 June 1750 [where?] and died 26 February 1815 [where?]. His father was Stephen Bowen who married Sarah Ficklin. [Need more. Ask Ray Gill]

He served in the Revolutionary War in Capt. Peter B. Bruin's Company, 11<sup>th</sup> Virginia Regiment. James was a fifth generation Bowen in Virginia.

---

<sup>272</sup> Interview, Charles H. Bowen, Jr., 4 June, 1988. Much of the Bowen family information in this chapter came from this interview.

He married Rachel Bower in Fauquier County December 7, 1781. She was born in 1767 [where?] and died 25 October 1843 [where?]. [Are their burial places known?] Her parents emigrated from Germany.<sup>273</sup> [Does Ray Gill know their names?]

They had 13 children including James Marshall Bowen [Jr.], Thomas Conrad Bowen, Peter B. Bowen, and William A. Bowen. We cover these four in this Chapter. [Is there a list of the others?] “Four brothers named Bowen brought land in Albemarle [County]. ... they came from the vicinity of Jeffersonton, Rappahannock County [Jeffersonton is in Culpeper County] ...”<sup>274</sup> “Thornton W. Bowen, who lived north of Whitehall was a brother of these gentlemen.”<sup>275</sup>

### **James Marshall Bowen [Jr.]**

He was born 29 March 1793 in Fauquier County.<sup>276</sup> His three daughters married three physicians.

James for some years prosecuted business as a merchant. He prospered in his affairs, and in 1835 bought the old Ramsey place, with its Mill, building the large brick mansion which still stands, calling it Mirador, [located 18 miles West of

---

<sup>273</sup> From Ray Gill.

<sup>274</sup> Rev. Edgar Woods, *Albemarle County in Virginia* (Harrisonburg, Virginia: C. J. Carrier Company, 1978), 147-148. The book was copyrighted in 1901. The 1978 version is a reprint.

<sup>275</sup> Woods, *Albemarle County in Virginia*, 147.

<sup>276</sup> Ray Gill.

Charlottesville on U.S. Rt. 250<sup>277</sup>] and making it one of the finest seats in the county. He married Frances Starke, and his children were Ann, the wife of Dr. John R. Baylor, Mary, the wife of Dr. O. R. Funsten, of Clarke and Eliza, the wife of her cousin, Dr. George M. Bowen, son of Peter. James died in 1880. His grandson, James Bowen Funsten, was recently consecrated Episcopal Bishop of Boise, Idaho....

In 1817, James and [his brother] William together made their first purchase of five hundred acres from Benjamin Ficklin—the old White place southwest of Batesville. James must have relinquished his interest to William, since in 1829 the latter with his wife, who was Eliza George, of Fauquier, sold this land to Rowland H. Bates...<sup>278</sup>

### ***Thomas Conrad Bowen***

He was born in Fauquier County 29 March, 1802.<sup>279</sup>

“When Thomas first came to the county, he was also engaged in the vocation of teaching. One of his schools was located beside the old Mount Pleasant Methodist Church, which stood on the hill three or four hundred yards west of Hillsboro, and there he had Slaughter Ficklin as one of his pupils.<sup>280</sup> In 1837 he purchased from John Pilson the place which he occupied till his death, which had been the old home

---

<sup>277</sup> Ray Gill.

<sup>278</sup> Woods, *Albemarle County in Virginia*, 147-148.

<sup>279</sup> Gill

<sup>280</sup> Ray Gill suggests he may be related to Sarah Ficklin.

of Isaac Hardin, and which consisted of three tracts... Thomas Bowen acted a more prominent part in the affairs of the county than his brother, and served as a magistrate prior to the Constitution of 1850. He was twice married, first to Miss Wheatley, of Culpeper, and secondly to Margaret Timberlake, of Clark County. He left two daughters, Mary Eliza, the wife of Colonel [John James]<sup>281</sup> Grantham, of Jefferson County, and Julia, the wife of John Shirley. His death occurred in 1886.<sup>282</sup>

### ***Peter B. Bowen***

James M. Bowen's son Peter B. Bowen (1786-?) married Sarah Fishback.<sup>283</sup> <sup>284</sup>  
"Peter, who was a physician, never resided in the county, though he more than once purchased land in the Greenwood neighborhood ..."<sup>285</sup> They are buried at Spring Hill, **[where is Spring Hill?]** graves unmarked. They had Peter B. Bowen, Jr. and George M. Bowen.<sup>286</sup>

---

<sup>281</sup> Ray Gill.

<sup>282</sup> Woods, *Albemarle County in Virginia*, 147.

<sup>283</sup> **See Culpeper Co. Homes (need exact reference #)** for description of Fishback home place.

<sup>284</sup> Interview, Russell C. Bowen, June 4, 1988.

<sup>285</sup> Woods, *Albemarle County in Virginia*, 147.

<sup>286</sup> Ray Gill.

*Peter B. Bowen, Jr.*

He married his first cousin Ellen Fitzhugh [Gill says Douglas?] Bowen (1845-1871), [sister of Black horseman William A. Bowen, Jr. and Henry Clay Bowen]. He was born in 1842. He is buried at the Fishback Family Cemetery, one-mile northeast of Jeffersonton. His wife is buried with him. Bowen Creek runs through property. [source?? Ask Ray Gill.]

He served in the Black Horse Cavalry, Fourth Virginia Cavalry, C. S. A. His confederate service record notes: "Taken prisoner at Falmouth, Va. April 1865. Physician. Stafford Co. Va."<sup>287</sup>

Keogh: bur. Jeffersonton. # [Can't find in Baird.]

Recheck following from B.H. Roster. See William A. Bowen grave description.

*George M. Bowen*

He married Eliza Bowen, daughter of James Marshall Bowen, Jr. and Frances Starke.<sup>288</sup> See James Marshall Bowen, Jr. below.

### ***William A. Bowen***

"William was a teacher, having had a school near Ivy Depot, and afterwards near Mount Ed church. He finally returned to Rappahannock."<sup>289</sup>

---

<sup>287</sup> Stiles, *4th Virginia Cavalry*, 100

<sup>288</sup> Ray Gill.

William A. Bowen was born 25 August 1795 in Fauquier County and died in 1866. His first wife was Eliza George of Fauquier, who he married 4 September 1821 in Fauquier County?]. She was born 1805/6-and died February 27<sup>th</sup>, 1836. She is buried in the family cemetery in Calverton.<sup>290</sup>

Sacred to the memory  
of  
Eliza G[eorge]. Bowen  
consort of  
William A. Bowen,  
who departed this life  
February 27<sup>th</sup>, 1836  
in the 31<sup>st</sup> year of her age.  
My husband who weeps  
around my grave  
compose your mind to rest  
Prepare with me for sudden death  
and live forever blest <sup>291</sup>

His second wife was Ellen Dade Fitzhugh of Culpeper County who he married 10 November 1836 in Chesterfield, Virginia. She was second cousin to the William

---

<sup>289</sup> Woods, *Albemarle County in Virginia*, 147.

<sup>290</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:10. "Consort of William A. Bowen, who departed this life February 27, 1836, in the 31st year of her age." Buried in the Bowen Cemetery, Calverton, Virginia. Located 3 miles S.E. of Calverton, Route 616, N.E. 330 yards, by private road, 120 yards to cemetery. This cemetery is on land later owned by Black Horseman Jesse Mauzy Peters.

<sup>291</sup> The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County Virginia* (Berryville, Virginia: Virginia Book Company, 1978), pp?.

Fitzhugh who built Chatham in Fredericksburg in 1771.<sup>292</sup> She was the daughter of George Fitzhugh and Sarah Battaile Dade.<sup>293</sup> They had four children, William A. Jr., Ellen Fitzhugh [Douglas?], Sallie Battaile, and Henry Clay Bowen.

*William A. Bowen, Jr.*

A Black Horse cavalryman, he married Susan Elizabeth Martin. See Chapter 8 for details on his family.

*Ellen Fitzhugh Bowen*

Ellen Fitzhugh Bowen married her first cousin, Peter B. Bowen. Jr. See him above. [from Ray Gill.] Resolve conflict. Ellen Douglas Bowen married Ferdinand C. Pue in 1866.

*Sallie Battaile Bowen*

She married George Tucker Crump in 1867.<sup>294</sup>

*Henry "Harry" Clay Bowen*

He was a VMI New Market Cadet.<sup>295</sup> Family tradition says he also fought with Black Horse and Mosby as opportunities arose.<sup>296</sup> [I have only been able to find him

---

<sup>292</sup> Ray Gill.

<sup>293</sup> [IGI 1761049. Born 1808, Culpeper county, VA.]

<sup>294</sup> Ray Gill.

<sup>295</sup> *The VMI New Market Cadets*, The Michie Co., Charlottesville, Va., 1933. [Describe Battle.]

in the rosters of the 43<sup>rd</sup> Cavalry but family stories say he served with his brother in the 4<sup>th</sup> Virginia Cavalry on occasion. Ray Gill.]

The VMI Register of Former Cadets describes him: “Bowen, Henry Clay - Greenwood, Va. 8 mos. and 2 yrs. Grad 19 N. M. Prvt A Co. Battle of New Market; Capt Cav. CSA. Farmer, Lumber dealer. Died March 5, 1928 in Charlottesville Hospital”.<sup>297</sup>

He was born in Remington 3 April 1846. He married Georgia Carmichael Rothrock in December 1869.<sup>298</sup> She was born about 1849 in Fredericksburg. She died 24 December 1920.<sup>299</sup> She was the daughter of Col. William Rothrock of Fredericksburg and Mary Rose Taliaferro of Caroline County. Henry Clay Bowen and his wife Georgia Rothrock Bowen are buried in the Remington Cemetery.<sup>300</sup>

Harry and Georgia had 10 children, six sons and four daughters. <sup>301</sup> **302**

---

<sup>296</sup> Interview, Russell C. Bowen, June 4, 1988.

<sup>297</sup> *Register of Former Cadets*, VMI, Memorial Edition, (Lexington, Virginia: Virginia Military Institute, 1957), 56.

<sup>298</sup> Ray Gill.

<sup>299</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:10; p. 84, for listing on daughter, Georgia Bowen Brittle, d. 1958. Husb. Leslie Meade Brittle.

<sup>300</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1: 215.

<sup>301</sup> Interview, Charles H. Bowen, Jr., 4 June, 1988. From his notes on Henry Clay Bowen.

<sup>302</sup> UDC application. Black Horse Chapter. **Check with Krick.**

- a. A daughter Georgia married Leslie Meade Brittle in 1907. She was born in Rappahanock Station 7 March 1874 and died 24 February, 1908. Her husband, Leslie Meade Brittle, “the fourth son of Peyton Oliver Brittle and Sallie Nelson Strickland, his wife born at \_\_\_\_\_, Va. March 10 1875 died March 18, 1996.<sup>303</sup>
- b. A daughter Ellen Fitzhugh Bowen married Samuel Cole Brittle.<sup>304</sup>

They had Charles Hay Bowen born 17 February 1888; died 1 June 1956, who married 29 April 1914 Grace Tilman (Tilghman) Cottingham of the Northern Neck, born 2 November 1889; died 20 January 1975.

Charles and Grace had Henry Russell Cottingham Bowen who died 3 July 1995 and was never married; and Charles Hay Bowen, Jr. who married Simone Wouters of Belgium. He died 24 April 1995. They had Martha Cottingham Bowen. Martha married Raymond W. Gill, Jr. of Warrenton in 1966.<sup>305</sup>

[Crick may have UDC application to Black Horse Chapter.]

---

<sup>303</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2: 172. Other Bowens buried in this plot.

<sup>304</sup> Ray Gill email.

<sup>305</sup> Except where noted, most information in for Henry Clay Bowen came from Ray Gill.

**Insert Family Tree diagram of  
Bowen Family. Use TMG.**

[From Ray Gill. FYI: I have pictures (tintypes) of William A. Bowen and Ellen Dade Fitzhugh. I also have William A., Jr. as a young man (doesn't appear to be in uniform), and Henry Clay in his uniform (taken after the war)]

I also have Henry Clay and William, Jr.'s original Southern Crosses as well as Henry Clay's New Market medal issued by the VMI Alumni Association after the war.]



## Appendix 2

### **The Childs Family**

The Childs family<sup>306</sup> were neighbors to the Martins and two of their children married two Martin children. Two Childs brothers and three Martin Brothers were in the Black Horse Cavalry. The Childs family home was named “Ajax.”

#### ***William H. Childs***

“William H. Childs was born ca. 1785 [April 23, 1783] and died in Fauquier County in 1859 [February 19, 1859.<sup>307</sup>] He married Nancy Ann Lewis December 30, 1808.<sup>308</sup> She was born ca. 1794 [September 6, 1795]<sup>309</sup> and died March 1, 1869. Her

---

<sup>306</sup> Letter from Mrs. Lewis Rosser, (Box 445, West Linn, Oregon 97068) to Lynn Hopewell, January 21, 1985; held by Lynn Hopewell (82 Erin Drive, Warrenton, VA 29186-2829). Most of the material on the Childs family was provided to the author by this letter. The author's inserted information is in brackets.

<sup>307</sup> William H. Childs tombstone, Childs Family Cemetery, Casanova, Fauquier County, Virginia, transcribed by Lynn Hopewell. There is no record of his death in Fauquier County death records.

<sup>308</sup> Fauquier Marriage Book 3: 9. William Childs and Wm. Lewis give bond anticipating marriage between Wm. Childs and Nancy Lewis. Dates unreadable, but sequence in book makes bond date in December, 1808.

<sup>309</sup> Tombstone, Childs Family Cemetery.

parents were William Lewis and Ann Montgomery. In 1837 William Childs moved to Fauquier County (possibly from Prince William County, since his wife had family there.) to a farm owned by John Strother, father of Alpheus J. Strother (husband of William Childs' daughter Ann.)”<sup>310</sup>

The obituary of Nancy Ann Lewis Childs reads as follows:

Died on the first day of March 1869 at the residence of her daughter, Mrs. Mildred Strother, near Markham in the county of Fauquier after a short illness, Mrs. Ann Childs, in the 73rd year of her age. She was the respected widow of the late William H. Childs.

Many years before death laid its hands upon this estimable lady, she became a pious member of \_\_\_\_\_ Church of Christ in the Baptist \_\_\_\_\_. And to this vocation she was, indeed \_\_\_\_\_ which \_\_\_\_\_ the Christian \_\_\_\_\_ social duty. Bland \_\_\_\_\_ in temper, warm, cordial and sincere with her affections, with a discriminating and intelligent benevolence \_\_\_\_\_ the esteem and universal love while living of those to whom she was known. \_\_\_\_\_ has left a memory deeply cherished in the reverence and love of her kindred neighbors and friends.

The writer of this notice was intimately acquainted with the deceased, and during her life, has often heard her say she was ready and willing to go at any moment it might please God to call her.

---

<sup>310</sup> [Look up chancery suit that settled his estate](#) per John Gott.

In the death of this highly esteemed and universally beloved Christian lady was associated that firmness and resignation which are the pledge and witness for those blessings beyond the grave where the weary are forever at rest.

The children of William H. Childs and Nancy Ann Lewis were:

1. William L. Childs. He was a member of the Virginia legislature and had a romance with his sister-in-law, Mildred Lee Martin.
2. Sarah. Married May 17, 1851, William H. Lake, son of Ludwell Lake and Agne Martin.
3. Mary V[irginia]; Married Robert E. Martin, December 14, 1869. She died February 4, 1912. See details in Chapter 5 on Robert E. Martin.
4. Catherine Mildred. Born February 22, 1817. Married June 11, 1845, James Strother. Died February 14, 1904. Their son was George Thomas Strother. George's obituary reads:

Mr. George Thomas Strother, a prominent farmer and cattle dealer, died Friday morning at his home "Elmore", near Markham, after a week's illness. The funeral took place Sunday afternoon at Leeds Church.

Mr. Strother was one of Fauquier's most outstanding citizens and will be greatly missed by his large circle of relatives and friends. Mr. Strother was a native of upper Fauquier and was seventy-eight years old, a son of the late James Strother and Mrs. Mildred Childs Strother.

In 1888 he married Miss Lou Bayly also of this county, who survives him with two sons, Charles E. Strother of Deleplane, and Dr. G. Thomas Strother, Brunswick, Md., and three daughters, Mrs. S.H. Eldson, Mrs. Thomas Foster and Mrs. Temple Berry, all of this county.<sup>311</sup>

5. Rebecca I.

6. Susan; married Moses Johnson.

7. Ann M.; Married 1st Alpheus Jackson Strother, April 14, 1840. [He was the son of John Strother and was a merchant in Salem (now Marshall). He is buried on John Strother's farm near Marshall.]<sup>312</sup> She married 2nd William M. Lynn.

Jeffries reported the obituary of their daughter Sallie Jackson.<sup>313</sup>

**Mrs. Sallie Jackson Conway, Mother of Mrs. S. W. Maphis, Passes Away  
After a Long and Useful Life**

At six o'clock, Wednesday morning, July 24th, at the home of her son-in-law, Dr. S. W. Maphis, Mrs. Sallie Jackson Conway passed to her reward. She was born in this county 72 years since. Her parents were Alpheus Strother, **of Culpeper county** **[check against other obit]**, and Miss Childs, of Ajax, Fauquier. Her life was wholly equal in worth to the substantial Virginian lineage that was her heritage. She was married while yet in her teens to Mr. E. H. Conway, of Stafford County, and was early left a widow with several children. How nobly she met the reverses of life and

---

<sup>311</sup> George Thomas Strother obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, Wednesday, March 29, 1933, page 1.

<sup>312</sup> **Per John Gott, told to the author**

<sup>313</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 205.

supported and educated those dependent on her is known to her friends. From childhood to the close of her career her life formed an example worthy to be copied. She early assumed the duties of godliness, and the charity and faithfulness inculcated by the Master found in her exemplification. Lest the too partial esteem of one who knew from childhood her life should make fulsome this notice, we rest with this modest tribute to a noble woman.

### ***Francis A. Childs***

The eighth child of William H. Childs and Nancy Ann Lewis was Francis A., born January 22, 1819/1820, in Virginia; enlisted in the Black Horse Cavalry March 15, 1862 at Bealeton; captured May 31, 1862 Hanover C.H.; exchanged August 5, 1862 Athens [Aikens?] Landing; captured December 3, 1862 Warrenton; exchanged March 29, 1863 City Point; present April 1864; paroled May 5, 1865 Fairfax C.H.; description on parole: grey hair, hazel eyes, dark complexion, height, 5 ft. six.

In 1840, he was listed in the Culpeper County census, and in 1850 in the Spottsylvania County census. On September 20, 1853<sup>314</sup>, Rev. Daniel Metzger married him and his cousin, Sarah A. Elizabeth Strother. She was born in Fauquier County May 9, 1836, and died in Pike County, Missouri. April 6, 1908. Buried

---

<sup>314</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 5: 119.

Ashley Cemetery, Ashley, Missouri, daughter of Elijah John Strother and Elvira Elizabeth Obannon.<sup>315</sup>

At age 45, he moved to Pike County, Missouri in 1865 after the war ended. A sketch in a Pike Co. history is as follows:

Mr. Childs was born in Fauquier county, Virginia, on January 22, 1819. He is the eldest son of a large family of children. His early life was spent working on his father's farm and attending the neighborhood schools. He was married, September 20, 1853, to Sarah Strother, also a native of Virginia.

Mr. Childs came to Pike County with his family in 1865 and settled on the farm where he now resides, about two and a half miles from the town of Ashley. The farm contains two hundred acres of valuable land, well improved and with indications of the energy and industry of its owner everywhere displayed. Mr. Childs has a family of seven children who, like himself, are active and energetic, and desirous of doing something for themselves and those dependent upon them. Mr. Childs cannot be classed as an old settler, but has been here long enough to become well acquainted with the people of the country, who hold him in high esteem for his many very excellent qualities.<sup>316</sup>

Francis and Sarah Childs had thirteen children:

1. William E., born in Virginia September 10, 1854; died in Virginia  
**November 20, 1855** [Fauquier County birth records record: William Elijah

---

<sup>315</sup> Letter, Mrs. Lewis Rosser to Lynn Hopewell, January 21, 1985.

<sup>316</sup> *History of Pike County, Missouri, Biographical Sketches*, (Des Moines, Iowa: Mills & company, 1882), 844.

- Childs, born on 4 September 1854, parents F.A. & Sarah Childs; P. 22, Line 30. William E. Childs, died on 26 December, 1855, croup, age of death 1 year & 3 months, parents F.A. & Sarah E. Childs, death reported by his father; Page 32, Line 22. There is a second William E. Childs of the same parents recorded as dying in January 1856, age of death 14 months; Page 29, Line 96.]<sup>317</sup>
2. James H., born in Virginia February 1856; died in Virginia August 9, 1857.

[Fauquier County birth records record: James S. Childs, born on 16 February 1856, parents Francis A. & Sarah Childs. Farmer; Page 46, Line 204. James H. Childs, died in August 1857, diarrhea, age of death 1 year & 6 months, born in Fauquier Co. Va., parents F.A & Sarah A. Childs, death reported by his father; Page 33, Line 22. This James S. must be the same as James H. above.]

3. [Fauquier County birth records record: Francis A. Childs, Jr., born on 17 September, 1857, parents Francis A. & Sarah A. Childs, Farmer; Page 54, Line 26. He died on 5 October 1858, age of death 1 year, born in Fauquier Co. VA, parents F.A. & S.E. Childs, death reported by father; Page 37, Line 21. This person seems to be the same dates as George F. below. There is no George F. Childs shown in Fauquier County death records.]

---

<sup>317</sup> Dee Ann Buck, *Fauquier County, Virginia Birth Registry 1853-1896* (Fairfax, Virginia; privately printed, 1996), 31.

4. George F.; born in Virginia September 27; died in Virginia **October 1858**.
5. Robert A.; born in Virginia February 5, 1859; died in Missouri May 26, 1882.
6. Ann Elizabeth; born in Virginia January 25, 1861; died in Virginia May 29, 1862. The Childs' neighbor Margaret Nourse wrote in her diary:  
"Monday May 26<sup>th</sup>. Rode over to Mrs. F. C. on hearing Annie has the mumps. Mrs. C. wanted me to give her 2 grs of calomel on Sunday. Thursday, May 29<sup>th</sup>. Little Annie Childs died this morning of membranous croup. How I wish I had been there again. That poor Mother, this is the 4<sup>th</sup> child she has lost."<sup>318]</sup>
7. Mary Louise; born in Virginia August 31, 1863; married October 18, 1882, David A. Hickman.
8. Edward Walton; born July 23, 1865 in Virginia; married August 13, 1887, Quinttete Hawkins.
9. Lillie E.; born November 27, 1866, in Missouri; married. February 2, 1887, in Missouri, Lewis S. Brown; died 1939.
10. Rebecca Irine; born October 18, 1868 in Missouri; died October 13, 1869, in Missouri.

---

<sup>318</sup> Edward D. C. Campbell, Jr., ""Strangers and Pilgrims"", The Diary of Margaret Tilloston Kemble Nourse 4 April-11 November 1862," *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* volume 91, number 4 (October, 1983): 466-7.

11. John William; born August 10, 1870 in Missouri; married November 1896, Kate Achman; died October 30, 1932.
12. George M.; born March 3, 1872 in Missouri; married October 13, 1913, Grace Griffith; died May 30, 1928.
13. Kate Strother; born May 30, 1875 in Missouri; married February 19, 1896 in Missouri, John Albert Palmer; died in Missouri February 28, 1931.
14. Ella Frances; born January 19, 1878 in Missouri; married December 6, 1903 John Thomas in Missouri; died June 16, 1957.<sup>319</sup>

Frances Childs' obituary read as follows:

Died -At his residence near Ashley, Sept. 6th, 1884, after an illness of only a few days, Capt. Frank A. Childs.<sup>320</sup> How sad to realize the fact that Frank Childs is no more. Cut down as he was when he seemed most fitted for usefulness. It is indeed hard to realize that we are no longer permitted to gaze on the manly form, no more to hear the cheery voice or clasp the willing hands.

Capt. Childs was a noble, generous and brave man, was the encomium passed by all who knew him. So respectful and obliging he commanded the admiration of all. As a citizen, he had the confidence of the entire community and as a husband and father, true and loving in every sense of the word. To the sad and lonely widow,

---

<sup>319</sup> Births, marriages and deaths from Childs family bible owned by Mrs. W.F. Rosser, Hannibal, Missouri Information provided by Mrs. Lewis Rosser, op. cite. fix cite

<sup>320</sup> There is no evidence that Frank Childs ever held the rank of Captain. This was probably a post war "promotion."

doubly so from the fact that only a few years has elapsed since the death of a favorite son, Robert, we extend our heartfelt sympathy.

The funeral services were conducted by Rev. R .O. Elmore at the residence at 2 o'clock p.m. Sunday. His remains were interred in the beautiful city of the dead near Ashley, a large number of friends relatives and acquaintances accompanying the cortege."<sup>321</sup>

9. James H.; married Margaret A. Martin. See details in Martin family notes above.

Add summary.\

**Insert Family Tree diagram of  
Childs Family. Use TMG.**

---

<sup>321</sup> Unidentified newspaper clipping; provide by Mrs. Lewis Rosser, op. cite.



## Appendix 3

### The Ficklin Family

Honest John Martin's sister Ann Coleman Martin married William Phillips Ficklin. This chapter outlines the Ficklin family and elaborates on William and Ann's children, two of whom served in the Black Horse Cavalry.

In 1912, Walter Homan Ficklin published a thorough investigation of the origins and genealogy of the Virginia Ficklin family. I quote it liberally below, especially for the generations before William Phillips Ficklin. <sup>322</sup> 323 I have extracted only the direct line of William Phillips Ficklin. The reference elaborates many collateral descendants.

Author Ficklin noted about this family: "They are moral, generally religious, of unimpeachable integrity, good citizens, fast friends and stern opponents of wrong

---

<sup>322</sup> Walter Homan Ficklin, *A Genealogical History of the Ficklin Family*, (Denver, Colorado: The W. H. Kistler Press, 1912). This is a charming book on the Ficklin family with much information. Over 594 individual Ficklin descendants are identified. In 2002, Ficklin's book was available on the internet at <[www.ficklin.org](http://www.ficklin.org)>.

<sup>323</sup> Rev. Horace Edwin Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies, A Genealogy of the Lewis family* (1891. Reissued Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing company, 1973), 58. An excellent source for the Lewis and Phillips family. Almost all the information in this chapter came from this source.

and oppression... They have never been noted for taciturnity; but, on the other had, have always done their full share of talking whenever talking was allowable.”

The first Ficklin immigrant to Virginia was William Ficklin.

### ***William and Sarah Ficklin***

William Ficklin and perhaps his wife Sarah, arrived in Virginia about 1720 or 1730, and settled on about one hundred and fifty acres of leased land on the north bank of the Rappahannock River, in Brunswick parish, King George County. Here they spent the remainder of their lives. Tobacco was the chief product of their farm and out of this they were allowed to pay their rent, for at that time, tobacco was the currency.

Here they reared a family of seven children, three daughters and four sons, all of whom lived to manhood or womanhood. William Ficklin died in 1756 when about sixty years of age. He probably died suddenly, since the deed of 1756 indicates that he left no will. All his children, excepting his two youngest sons, were married by this time and he had several grandchildren.

His widow survived him and doubtless continued to reside on the old plantation on the Rappahannock, for they had leased it for the remainder of their lives, but of her there is no further record.

They had four sons and three daughters:

1. Patience, who married Ignatius West.
2. Sarah, who married Stephen Bowen, and had a son, James.
3. Elizabeth, who married Robert Roach.
4. William (II).

5. Thomas (I).
6. Anthony.
7. Benjamin (I).

### ***Anthony Ficklin Son of William and Sarah***

Anthony Ficklin, son of William (I) and Sarah Ficklin, was born in King George County, and resided at Poplar Settlement in Stafford county, about ten miles from Falmouth. He married Elizabeth Bruce, daughter of Ch. Bruce of King George, whose wife is supposed to have been a Pannill. He died prior to 1810... [the names of his children are:]

1. Charles... who lived nearly all his life in Fauquier... married Mary Strother, daughter of Anthony Strother of Spottsylvania County.<sup>324</sup>
2. Benjamin... married Susannah Foushee, in 1787 in Culpeper County.
3. Lewis.
4. Frances, who married a Duncan, and left no issue.
5. Elizabeth, who married a Stewart; their son and daughter went to Missouri.
6. Mildred, who did not marry.
7. Susan, who married a Bell and, after his death, went to Missouri with her family.

---

<sup>324</sup> Ancestry File No. LH6D-T7 gives his family. Fix cite.

## ***Lewis Ficklin Son of Anthony***

Lewis Ficklin, son of Anthony, lived first in Stafford, as shown by the census of 1810. He was then over twenty-six and under forty-five years of age. The returns would indicate that his wife was living and that he had two daughters and two sons. He had fourteen slaves at that time. ... his will was probated in [Fauquier county] in 1828, and his estate administered there in the years following.

His wife was Simphah Rosah Enfield Phillips, who was born 10 April 1775.

Their sons were:

1. William Phillips Ficklin who married (1) Ann Coleman Martin and (2) Frances Dulaney. [The book by Walter Homan Ficklin does not carry the Phillips-Martin-Dulaney lines any further.]
2. Gustavus, who married Virginia E. Nelson, of Fauquier and reared one son, James W. of Warrenton, Va. Who married (1) Miss Green, (2) Miss Jasper, and (3) Miss McDonald, and has a son Lewis Hamilton. [Below says son is James W.]

### *Simphah's Father Col. William Phillips*

Lewis Ficklin's wife was Simphah Rosah Enfield Phillips. Her father was William Phillips who married Elizabeth Fowke.<sup>325</sup> Col. Phillips was born November 1, 1744. He was a Colonel in the Revolutionary War, and at his death in 1797, was the High

---

<sup>325</sup> The Fowke family is extensively described in the Hayden reference.

Sheriff of Stafford County, Virginia. Col. Phillip's father was James Phillips of Wales, who came to Stafford County in 1714 and married Elizabeth Griffin.

William and Elizabeth had the following children. (I could not resist listing all their children because of the interesting names.):

1. Simphah Rosah Enfield who married Lewis Ficklin. (See below.)
2. Narcissa Burdett, born September 16, 1777. She married Stanfield Jones  
**(more below. See the next page of Hayden.)**
3. John Siddenham, born April 10, 1777. He died without issue.
4. Robert Dinwiddie, born November 30, 1779. He died without issue, September 6, 1802.
5. Ormacinda Maxamelia Pamela, born September 17, d.s. 1781.
6. Tarissa Hamble, born February 10, 1783. She married a Cratcher.
7. Sophronis Griffin Harriet, born January 13, 1785. She died without issue.
8. William James who had no children.
9. Laurinda Louisa Agnes, born March 21, 1788 who had no children.
10. Silem Frederick Gustavus, born Mary 3, 1790.
- 11. Lucy Elizabeth Dinwiddie Mason, born February 11, 1793. {see next page of Hayden for more. }**

## **Lewis and Simphah's Son Gustavus**

William's brother Gustavus S. Ficklin, "died in his house near Warrenton, November 18, [13 is probably the correct day] 1891 in the 78<sup>th</sup> year of his age".<sup>326 327</sup> The death date would put his birth about 1813, just seven years younger than William Phillips Ficklin. [Check death certificate for parents.]

His wife Virginia E. Nelson was born 11 June 1829 and died 19 September 1915. She is buried next to him. She was the daughter of George Nelson and Elizabeth Porter.<sup>328</sup> Virginia's sister, Sarah is buried there, died 25 April, 1882 aged 50 years. Virginia's parents are also buried here: Elizabeth H. Porter died 12 September 1873 aged 80 years. Her husband George Nelson died 23 March 1860 aged 76 years.<sup>329</sup>

Gustavus and Virginia's only child was James W. Ficklin who was born 23 April 1852 and died 5 March 1932. His wife Lucy F. Jasper [his second wife] was born 28

---

<sup>326</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:211. The Nelson-Withers-Ficklin Cemetery is "located 2 miles N. of Opal on East side of Route 29 to right end of farm road, fenced, being restored by owners, boxwood, trees and periwinkle on what was called Licking Run Farm, when people were buried there." [Find Cem.]

<sup>327</sup> Fauquier County Deaths, 1853-1896: 1444. Ficklin, Gustavus S. died 13 Nov. 1891 in Warrenton of grippe at age 77. He was the son of Lewis and Susan Ficklin and was born in Fauquier County. He was a farmer. Information given by Virginia E. Ficklin, his wife. The date of his death here 13 November vice 18 November in Baird. The tombstone is probably difficult to read.

<sup>328</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:211. Her parents are named on her tombstone.

<sup>329</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:211.

November 1867 and died 15 January 1909. She is buried next to him in the Ficklin Cemetery.<sup>330</sup> He married third a Miss McDonald.<sup>331</sup> [check Fauquier marriages.]

### ***Lewis and Simpah's Son William Phillips Ficklin***

William Phillips Ficklin was born in Stafford County, Virginia in 1806 and died in Fauquier County 21 December 1873 at age 67.<sup>332</sup> He was the son of Lewis Ficklin of Fauquier County and Simpah Rosah Enfield Phillips. William was named after his mother's father, Col. William Phillips. Simpah was born April 10, 1775. Her family was well established in Stafford.<sup>333</sup> Simpah's father was a Revolutionary War Colonel and High Sheriff of Stafford County, Virginia.

Ann Coleman Martin was his first wife. She was born 7 April 1805. At age 47 she died 22 February 1854.<sup>334</sup> The Reverend George Lemmon married Ann and William

---

<sup>330</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:211.

<sup>331</sup> Mary Kay Ficklin Holterman (3401 Iva Ada Dr. Hillsborough, NC 27278), information on his three wives provided by email message to author, January 19, 2000. She is the great-granddaughter of Lt. William Lewis Ficklin.

<sup>332</sup> Fauquier County Deaths, 1853-1896: 64. He died of heart disease. His consort was Frances Ficklin. His son William L Ficklin gave the information. He was the son of Lucius [Lewis] and Rosa E. [Simpah Rosah Enfield] Ficklin.

<sup>333</sup> Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies*, 158.

<sup>334</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible. "She departed this life Feby. 22 \_\_\_\_, aged 48 years, 10 months, 15 days." Based on her birthdate given in the bible, this calculates exactly to 22 February 1854.

Phillips Ficklin,<sup>335</sup> 6 April 1836.<sup>336 337 338</sup> He was about 30. She was 30, one day before her 31<sup>st</sup> birthday. [Bible says she was his 3<sup>rd</sup> wife.]

Exactly nine months after the death of Ann, he married Frances Dulaney 22 [or 19 recheck] November 1854 in Fauquier County.<sup>339</sup> He was 48 and a widower, she was 44 and single. He was recorded as born in Stafford County, she in Culpeper County. She was the daughter of French and Ann Dulaney. Alexander H. Spilman performed the marriage ceremony. There is no record of children. [check Ficklin cemeteries for Ann's and Frances' grave. Bible says she was 3<sup>rd</sup> wife. ]

### *Ann and William Ficklin's Home*

The family lived at their home "Great Marsh" near Midland. "The Ficklin family owned the estate from 1832 to 1957. William and John Ficklin, who lived in the original Federal-style house, served in Company H of the 4th Virginia Cavalry or Blackhorse Troop."<sup>340</sup>

---

<sup>335</sup> A William P. Ficklin appears in various Fauquier records as a Justice of the Peace. See for example, Fauquier Wills, Book 24, page 246, Mary Martin estate, October 26, 1852. Mary Martin would have been Ficklin's wife Ann's mother.

<sup>336</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 5: 107. "William P. Ficklin and Ann C. Martin, ...daughter of Elias Martin, deceased." Bondsman John Martin [Ann's brother.] Bond dated 6 April 1836, the same day as the marriage return.

<sup>337</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 5: 12. This was not a bond but the license.

<sup>338</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible. This is the same date as noted in the bible.

<sup>339</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 7:2.

<sup>340</sup> Kimmarie Lewis, "Collector Holds History's Beauty," *Fauquier Magazine*, November 1991: 18. Donald R. Thorpe now owns "Great Marsh".

Ann and William had four children. One son died at 18, another was killed at 20 and a girl died in infancy. Only Lewis survived to adulthood. One can only imagine the sadness of their father. Ann died before the deaths of her two boys. William Lewis and John Marshall were both in the Black Horse Cavalry. They were first cousins to the Martin boys.

*George Martin Ficklin*

William and Ann's oldest son George was born 4 January 1838 in Fauquier County and at age 19 died of typhoid fever at home in September 1857.<sup>341</sup> He was named after his sister's brother who also died young.

*Francis Ann Ficklin*

Francis [check spelling in death book.] was born 30 April 1842. She died in infancy, 26 May 1842.

*John Marshall Ficklin*

John Marshall Ficklin<sup>342</sup> was born 7 November 1843. He was killed 11 June 1864 at Trevillian Station, aged 20.<sup>343</sup> His body was never found. We know little about

---

<sup>341</sup> George M. Ficklin entry, Fauquier County Deaths 1854-1896: 30. He was unmarried. His father gave information. His parents were William P. and A[nn]. M[artin]. Ficklin. He died at his father's home. [The day of the month was not given.]

<sup>342</sup> The 1850 census record selection shown earlier in this chapter for the Ficklin family gives John's middle initial as W vice M. The W is an error. His middle name is given as Marshall in the Elias Martin Family Bible and his Confederate records consistently use M. U.S. Supreme Court Justice John Marshall was from Fauquier County.

him except his military service record. He enlisted in the Black Horse 20 October 1862.

*William Lewis Ficklin*

William Lewis Ficklin was born in 18 September 1840. He died 20 April 1904, aged 63. He is buried in Warrenton Cemetery.<sup>344 345 346</sup> He was the only adult survivor of his three siblings.

He married Lucy Sales Eastham whose father was Col. Lawson Eastham of Rappahannock County whose married Maria Dulan[?] 6 January 1838 in Fauquier County.<sup>347</sup> [Look for marriage record.] She was born in 1848 and died in 1921. [Check death certif. for name of mother.] She is buried in Warrenton Cemetery next to her husband.<sup>348</sup>

---

<sup>343</sup> R.A. Hart newspaper article, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper, in scrapbook of the Black Horse Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>344</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:176.

<sup>345</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 194. The citation noted that he died in 1904, but the month was not stated. Death year is from tombstone.

<sup>346</sup> William L. Ficklin tombstone, Warrenton, Cemetery, Warrenton, Virginia. Transcribed by author in 1999.

<sup>347</sup> [IGI film record 190439 and 1903993. [improve cite.]] Also check IGI: 457936 film: married Frances Jane Elizabeth Rixey, 30 August 1833 in Virginia.

<sup>348</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 2:211.

On February 21, 1938 His wife Lucy was reported to be living in Richmond, aged ninety-two.<sup>349</sup> This reference is wrong if her tombstone is correct. [check again.]

[Look for marriage record in Rappahannock.]

They had the following children:<sup>350 351</sup>

1. Anna. [Mary Kay has no record.]

2. William Phillips. He had a farm in Spring Hill. He married Louise Brown from Remington. She was the daughter of Judson Brown of Fauquier County.<sup>352</sup> They had two children: He is buried in Warrenton Cemetery; 1872-1929. His wife (1875-1956) is buried beside him.<sup>353</sup>

2.1. William, who died in June 1986. He worked in Saranac Lake, New York in the hospital as an X-ray technician.

2.2. Mary Louise who married Donald Hamilton. Died November 1980.

---

<sup>349</sup> The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County*, 460.

<sup>350</sup> Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies*, 158.

<sup>351</sup> Telephone interview with William M. Ficklin (182 Apple Road, Boones Mille, VA 24065), by Lynn Hopewell, 5 July 1999. Mr. Ficklin is the son of George Ficklin, son of William L. Ficklin and his wife Lucy S. Eastham. Mr. Ficklin gave much of the information on his grandfather's family.

<sup>352</sup> Holterman, 19 January, 2000.

<sup>353</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:114.

3. Alice Dinwiddie, who is buried next to her parents in Warrenton Cemetery. Her tombstone says 1870-1962.<sup>354</sup> She never married and in her later years she lived with her sister Nan in Richmond.<sup>355</sup>
4. George, [Is this the assessor of Lee district?] who married Mae Malcom. They had:
  - 4.1. Edward
  - 4.2. George Lewis now retired in Boones Mill, Virginia. He married Mae Morse, daughter of Dr. Edward Morse of Culpeper County.
  - 4.3. William M.
  - 4.4. Mildred.
5. John Dulaney. [A John D. Ficklin, born November 8, 1878, died May 19, 1967, is buried in Warrenton Cemetery. Mattie R. Ficklin, February 3, 1882-April 27, 1957 is buried next to him.<sup>356</sup>] Mr. William Ficklin said he married "Matt" [ask Mr. Ficklin, "Molly" vice "Matt"] Robinson from Lakota. He married Martha Caroline Robinson, daughter of Thomas Holmes Robinson of Fauquier County.<sup>357</sup> They had:

---

<sup>354</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:176

<sup>355</sup> Holterman, 19 January, 2000.

<sup>356</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:182.

<sup>357</sup> Holterman, 19 January, 2000.

5.1. John Bland Ficklin who was born in 1911 and died in 1995. He is buried in Arlington.<sup>358</sup> He married Elizabeth Spletter. Their children are:

5.1.1. John Bland Ficklin, Jr.

5.1.2. Mary Kay Ficklin [m. a Holterman.]

5.1.3. William Dulaney Ficklin [and others-get from Mary Kay.]

5.2. Thomas Phillip Ficklin. Called “Bug”, he died in Raleigh, North Carolina about 1988. He had three children.

5.3. Jane Wilton Ficklin who married James Bresnahan. He was an F.B.I. agent. She lives in Kansas City, Missouri. They have three daughters, two of whom are twins. A son died in infancy.<sup>359</sup>

6. Floyd. Died at age twelve<sup>360</sup>. He was born in the old Ficklin home place and later moved to Warrenton.<sup>361</sup>

7. Nancy, married Aubin Buckley Branch. Had a son Aubin.

### *William L. Ficklin's Black Horse Service*

William served in the Black Horse Cavalry as a Lieutenant. He was involved in a famous incident during the war when his comrade William Lee was killed:

---

<sup>358</sup> Holterman, email to author, January 19, 2000.

<sup>359</sup> Holterman, 19 January, 2000.

<sup>360</sup> Holterman, 19 January, 2000.

<sup>361</sup> Interview, William M. Ficklin, July 5, 1999. The next children named by Mr. Ficklin. They are not in Hayden.

In her Friday, April 17, 1863 letter, Susan Caldwell recorded: "Quite an excitement up town, the Black Horse are in full speed and the yankees are up the street. We have just heard of the death of Richard [she mistakes Richard for William] Lee a member of the Black Horse. An officer was at John M. Fants' and was in conversation with the Ladies when Lee heard of it, and although Lee was persuaded not to go he persisted saying he would make him surrender --he rushed in the house -- some say he fired first, others say the officer fired first and shot him dead on the spot. Poor fellow we all knew him. Capt. Farnsworth shot him. Better for him to have remained away unless he had had more with him -- some say that others were there and two were captured."<sup>362</sup>

Another source reports the same incident:

The Death of William Lee. In the early fall of 1862 a Federal colonel was eating dinner at "Melma," home of colonel John M.[erriman] Fant. Fant was the father of five very attractive daughters and kept a good table. The visitor was facing the big front window and his white mare was hitched out in front. His comrades were camped across the river beyond Fant's Mill. While enjoying his meal he saw four Confederates ride up in front. Two of them went in the back, one on each side of the house. The Federal officer's orderly fled down toward the river on a fleet horse. Frank Duke one of the confederates, shot at him. The other three Confederates were **Lieutenant Bill Ficklin, father of George Ficklin, the present assessor of Lee District**

---

<sup>362</sup> Welton, *"My Heart Is So Rebellious," The Caldwell Letters, 1861-1865*, 217.

[was Geo son of Bill or Gustavus?]; Hugh Hamilton, later Treasurer of Fauquier County and William Lee.

Ficklin stayed out in front. William Lee, who was drinking, went on into the house and as he entered the dining room the Federal colonel shot him in the breast. However, Lee followed on after him into a entry, then went into Mrs. Fant's room and fell behind the bed. It is said that there are still blood stains on the floor. The Federal officer went out a side door and on to a chimney, then dodged to the ice house and down by the garden fence. Hugh Hamilton shot at him three times but missed...<sup>363</sup> [find house, take photo.]

Fredericksburg Star, 4/22/04, p.2, c.2, cites 4th Va. Cav., per Krick. [Need citation; papers in my files] #

Till he 'fell on sleep' Tuesday morning last the 20th inst., in the 64th year of his age, William L. Ficklin was the only surviving child of the late William Phillips Ficklin, [and his wife Ann Coleman Martin] a Virginia gentleman of the old regime.

Mr. Ficklin's home was near Bealeton, Fauquier co., Va., where he was born, reared and spent a most useful life.

He was laid to rest on Friday afternoon last beside his ancestors at the old family residence. In early manhood he married the daughter of Col. Lawson Eastham of Rappahannock Co., who with five children mourn the loss of a loving and exemplary husband, a kind and indulgent father.

---

<sup>363</sup> [The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County Virginia*, 460. Research by M. D. Gore, Summerduck, Virginia February 21, 1938. Need publisher, city.]

At the call of his state, when but 20 years old, he went forth to the tented field in the distinguished Black Horse Cavalry under the command of the late Gen. William H. Payne<sup>364</sup>, and during the progress of the struggle between the states by duty well performed and personal gallantry rose to a lieutenancy in that command. He with his comrades emblazoned the name of the "Black Horse Troop" high on the roll of fame.

An intimate association with Mr. Ficklin from boyhood enables me to state that truth and honor were the sheet anchors of a life that wrought to him such character as to do honor to his age and generation. His personality was a most pleasing one.

While having principles, and firmly adhering to them he never sought to enforce his views on others. All knowing him will concur that "Billy Ficklin" was a manly man, a brave soldier and a courteous gentleman. (Born 1841.)<sup>365</sup>

[check WPA records for this home.]

---

<sup>364</sup> General William Henry Fitzhugh Payne, second captain of the Black Horse.

<sup>365</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 194.

**Insert Family Tree diagram of  
Ficklin Family. Use TMG.**

Possibly add this material:

STROTHER

Excerpts from A GENEALOGICAL HISTORY OF THE FICKLIN FAMILY,  
compiled by Walter (or Homan) Roman Ficklin published by the W. H. Kistler  
Press, Denver, CO. in 1912, Page 45.

20. Charles Ficklin, son of Anthony, lived nearly all of his life in Fauquier. His father speaks of him as a citizen of that county in a deed dated October 29, 1784. (Stafford records) He speaks of himself as a citizen of Fauquier in his Will, which was probated October 28, 1816. His wife, Mary, is mentioned in the Will, and the children named therein were as follows:

(61.) Anthony Strother was living in Stafford in 1810 (Census). He married, but he died childless, 1844, in Fauquier, where his estate was administered.

(62.) Charles B. never married.

(63.) Betsy did not marry and lived with her sister, Mrs. C. M. Johnson, and died in her home, the old Nathan Boone Place on Femme Osage Creek, St. Charles County, Missouri, and is buried there.

(64.) Susan B., married a Mr. Robinson, and lived at Wheeling, West Virginia.

(65.) Maria Pannel, married Major Thomas Tate and had one child, Mary

STROTHER Tate, who married John W. Taylor, and reared six children:

Maria Virginia

Sarah

Margaret

India STROTHER

Thomas Tate

Mary L.

(66.) Nancy married George Buckner Fant, December 15, 1815, and emigrated to Missouri. They had a son, Charles Ficklin Fant. Miss M. E. Deatherage, of Carrollton, Missouri, is a descendant of theirs.

(67.) Drucilla Harriet married Charles Morehead Johnson and moved to Missouri. They had a son, Charles Montgomery Johnson, who died in St. Charles, Missouri, June 7, 1910.

(68.) Polly married Philip Foushe.

\*The maiden name of Mary, wife of Charles Ficklin, has been handed down to her descendants as Mary STROTHER, daughter of ANTHONY STROTHER of Spottsylvania County. It will be noted her first child was named in honor of Anthony Strother, and she had a granddaughter named Mary Strother Tate.

(Corrections have been made by Mrs.(George W.) Mary Johnson McElhiney)  
from <http://www.mindspring.com/~tkemp/stroth3.html> :



## Appendix 4

### **The Fisher Family**

“Honest” John Martin’s wife Susan A. Fisher was born 10 March 1803 and died 9 August 1879 at age 76.<sup>366</sup> She is buried in the Martin Family Cemetery. She was a member of a very large and prosperous family, She had ten siblings. She grew up very near her future husband.

#### ***Richard Fisher***

Susan Fisher’s grandfather, Richard Fisher was born about 1753 in Fauquier County, Virginia. He married Mary Coffee there 26 December 1778. [Marriage Bonds of Fauquier County Virginia page 40.] He died about 1779.

#### ***William Thomas Fisher***

Susan A. Fisher was the daughter of William Thomas Fisher and his first wife Mary Frances Gordon. Thomas Fisher was called “Captain” in the 1850 Federal

---

<sup>366</sup> Susan A. Martin tombstone, Martin Family Cemetery, Fauquier County, Virginia.

Census.<sup>367</sup> Their marriage bond in Fauquier County was dated 12 January 1801.<sup>368</sup>

<sup>369</sup> He was born about 1777. Mary Frances was the daughter of John Gordon and Martha \_\_. [Bond?? ] \_\_. Martha died before 1835.<sup>370</sup>

Twenty four years after his first marriage, Thomas Fisher married Martha Ann Ball, who was born about 1814. Their marriage bond was dated 9 February 1825.<sup>371</sup> He was 48. At about 21 years of age, she was 27 years younger than he.

In 1850, he was living near his daughter Susan. In the Federal census, he was described as “Captain Thomas Fisher”, aged 65,<sup>372</sup> and was living with his wife Martha A., aged 46; his son James A., aged 21; his daughter Sarah M. aged 18; and

---

<sup>367</sup> Captain Thomas Fisher household, 1850 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia; Ashby District, dwelling 838, family 865, page 257B, line 12; National Archives Micropublication, roll 930, page 256. Interestingly, four doors away, dwelling 832 was the family of Charles Randolph, father of Robert Randolph, the third captain of the Black Horse Cavalry.

<sup>368</sup> Fauquier Marriage Book 2: 227; County Clerk’s Office, Warrenton, Virginia. Bond dated January 12, 1801. Bondsman was William Gordon. “Sir, please grant license for my daughter Frances who is to be married to Thomas Fisher .... Signed by Margaret Gordon. Margaret was her sister. Also signed by Francis Brook and George “Gordain” and William “Gordain”.

<sup>369</sup> Donald G. Martin, compiler, “William Fisher-Mary Frances Fisher” family group sheet” (undocumented); ancestral file numbers BP71-H7 and BP71-JD, *Ancestral File*, version 4.19 (1999), Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City, Utah. This file names them as William Fisher (rather than Thomas) and Mary Frances Fisher. However, Fauquier records refer to them as Thomas and Frances. That he was William Thomas and she was Mary Frances also supported by the fact that their daughter Susan Fisher Martin named her first son William Thomas and her first daughter Mary Frances.

<sup>370</sup> Determination of Thomas Gordon’s heirs. Fauquier County Minute Book, 1834-35, 29 September 1835, 352-3. Since John Gordon’s heirs included no wife, we assume she had died.

<sup>371</sup> Fauquier Marriage Book 4: 149, County Clerk’s Office, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>372</sup> He was 73, but lowered his age for the census.

The Fisher Family

his daughter Mary E. aged 16. Their son Thomas was not living with them. Thomas was a farmer, owning real estate valued at \$20,000 . (See image.)<sup>373</sup>

William Thomas Fisher died 1 May 1854 in Fauquier County at age 77.<sup>374</sup> He had

574 SCHEDULE L—Free Inhabitants in Leahys District in the County of Fauquier State of Virginia enumerated by me, on the 11<sup>th</sup> day of Oct 1850. E. McNewen Ass't Marshal

Dwelling-house number in the order of valuation	Family dwelling in the order of valuation	The Name of every Person whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1850, was in this family.	DESCRIPTION.			Profession, Occupation, or Trade of each Male Person over 15 years of age.	Value of Real Estate owned.	Place of Birth, Naming the State, Territory, or Country.	Married within the year.	Attended School within the year.	Persons in Family under 15 years of age.	Whether deaf and dumb, blind, insane, idiotic, pauper, or convict.
			Age.	Sex.	Color, black or white.							
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13
847	847	Leahy Shormer	46	m	w	Farmer	20000	Pa				
		Melrose Sr	44	m	w			"				
		Acoga Sr	20	m	w			"				
		Mary E. Sr	18	f	w			"				
		Jno. W. Sr	16	m	w			"		15		
		Nancy Sr	14	f	w			"		15		
		James Sr	12	m	w			"		15		
		Lucy Sr	10	f	w			"		15		
		Melrose Sr	8	m	w			"				
		Alaer Sr	6	m	w			"				
		Ella Sr	2	f	w			"				
848	865	Capt Thomas Fisher	65	m	w	Farmer	10000	"				
		Martha A. Sr	46	f	w			"				
		James A. Sr	21	m	w			"				
		Sarah M. Sr	19	f	w			"				
		Mary E. Sr	16	f	w			"				
849	866	Alexander Fletcher	40	m	w	Shoemaker		"				
		Lester Sr	35	m	w			"				

<sup>373</sup>1850 U.S. Census, Fauquier County, Virginia, page 257B, line 12. Interestingly, four doors away, dwelling 832 was the family of Charles Randolph, father of Robert Randolph, the third captain of the Black Horse Cavalry.

<sup>374</sup> Thomas Fisher entry, Fauquier County Deaths 1853-1896: 12. His consort was Martha A. Fisher. Information was given by F. Fisher, a son. His parents are listed as E. A. Flinn and Harriett, his wife, but this is an obvious transcription error as a distracted clerk dittoed the record above.

fifteen children, but only mentions nine in his will dated 8 August 1853,<sup>375</sup> none of whom were by his second wife. In his will he names his second wife, Martha Ann.

[check Martha's death record. She named in husband's death record in 1854.]

## ***His Children***

William Thomas Fisher had the following children by Mary Frances Gordon<sup>376</sup>

1. **John Fisher, born 1801 in Fauquier County.** A marriage return for John Fisher and Elizabeth Holtzclaw is dated 13 May 1830.<sup>377 378</sup> A John Fisher, 1801-1884, is buried in Warrenton Cemetery.<sup>379</sup> A child of theirs, Sarah Francis Fisher, born 7 January 1844 died 5 August 1915 at age 71.<sup>380</sup>

---

<sup>375</sup> Thomas Fisher will (1853), Fauquier County Will Book 25: 216, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia [Check name again, not Thomas R. ?]

<sup>376</sup> GEDCOM [which one?] file. All birth years except Susan's come from this source. This source extensively develops the line of Dade Marcelus Fisher. Bible cited owned by Mrs. Emma Guthrie of Halifax County. Call!!

<sup>377</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 5: 218. Return of marriages by C[umberland]. George to Circuit Court, 1 January 1831.

<sup>378</sup> Moore, *A History of Broad Run Baptist Church, S.B.C., 1762-1987*, 65. Cumberland George was pastor of Broad Run Baptist Church 1826-1841.

<sup>379</sup> Baird, Jordan and Scherer, *Fauquier County Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, 1:107.

<sup>380</sup> Sarah Francis Fisher entry, Fauquier County Deaths 1912-1917, volume 5: 879. Aged 71 years, 7 months, 28 days. She was a housekeeper and was born in Fauquier County. She was buried in Warrenton. [ No grave found.]

2. Susan A. Fisher, born 10 March 1803, who married John Martin. See chapter 4.
3. **Dade Marcelous Fisher, b. about 1804 in Fauquier County and died June** 1891 in Halifax County.<sup>381</sup> He married Martha W. Cheatham 11 September 1828 in Campbell County,<sup>382</sup> daughter of Robertson Cheatham. They had ten children.
4. **William G. Fisher, born about 1806 in Fauquier County.**
5. **Samuel Fisher, born about 1808 in Fauquier County.** A marriage return for Samuel B. Fisher and Mary E. Withers is dated 14 February 1837.<sup>383</sup> Perhaps this is their marriage.
6. **Robert Fisher, born about 1810 in Fauquier County.**
7. **Elias Fisher, born about 1812 in Fauquier County.**
8. **Richard Fisher, born about 1812 in Fauquier County**
9. Frances Fisher, born about 1816 in Fauquier County. (Not mentioned in will.)
10. George L. Fisher, born about 1818 in Fauquier County. (Not mentioned in will.)

---

<sup>381</sup> The county seat of Halifax County is South Boston, about 150 miles south of Warrenton.

<sup>382</sup> The county to the immediate north of Halifax County.

<sup>383</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 5: 124. Bondsman was H. A. White.

11. Margaret Fisher, born 1826 in Fauquier County. She married John W. Hume, 26 November 1840 [was she really 52?].<sup>384</sup> She was born in 1788 and died 15 August 1853, aged 65.<sup>385</sup> [Not born in 1826, so is this same Margaret?] The ancestral file quoted lists Margaret as a child of Thomas's second wife, Martha, but more reliable evidence gives her as a child of Frances. (See quotation under John Gordon below.)<sup>386</sup> But, m. to Martha Feb. 1825, after Margaret born. ?

He had the following children by Martha Ann Ball:

12. Thomas H. Fisher, born 1828 in Fauquier County. (Not mentioned in will.)<sup>387</sup>
13. James A. Fisher, born 1830 in Fauquier County. (Not mentioned in will.)
14. Sarah M. Fisher, born 1832 in Fauquier County. She died there in 1887. (Not mentioned in will.)
15. Mary E. Fisher, born 1834 in Fauquier County. (Not mentioned in will.)

---

<sup>384</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 5: 219. Marriage by Barnet Grimsley. Returns dated May 4, 1841.

<sup>385</sup> Margaret Hume entry, Fauquier County Deaths 1853-1896: 3. A. M. Payne gave the information, but this is probably a transcribing error. The same man is named as the informant on a Payne death on the line above.

<sup>386</sup> Fauquier County Minute Book, 1834-35, 29 September 1835, 352-3, Clerk of the Courts Office, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>387</sup> Film No. 445990, Page 806, says Thomas H. Fisher's father (but Thomas H. Fisher not mentioned in his father's will.) was Thomas Fisher and his mother Martha Ann Ball. Film 445992, Ord. No. 89181, Temple S.L. says Margaret Fisher born about 1826 and was a daughter of Thomas Fisher and Martha Ann Ball.

## ***William Thomas Fisher Estate***

Thomas Fisher was very wealthy. His estate was very large.

[Cite from will. Try to find land records.]

Search Stafford records.

Search Stafford library. Search lds.

See Johnson FTM web page for more on fishers.

## ***John Gordon***

Susan Fisher Martin's mother was Mary Frances Gordon, daughter of John Gordon. John Gordon's brother Thomas was a Revolutionary War soldier. The following record tells us that Frances Gordon's father was John and named his children.

It being this day proved to the satisfaction of the Court that Thomas Gordon enlisted in the army of the revolution at its commencement and that he was subsequently promoted to a Captaincy and served to the end of the war, and after his discharge from the service, he set out to return home and died on his way from the South, where he had rendered most of his military service—that he died intestate within three months after his discharge, had never married—his father died about two years previous to his death, and his brother John Gordon was his eldest brother and heir at law—said John died between 1790 and 1800 intestate, and his only heirs were William Gordon, John Gordon, Francis Gordon, & Frances

Gordon—Frances intermarried with Thomas Fisher and is since dead leaving no last will, and her only children and heirs are John, Dade, William, Samuel, Robert, Elias, Francis, George, Richard, Susan who intermarried with John Martin, and Margaret Fisher. Francis Gordon also died intestate in 1824, and his only heirs are Joseph Gordon, Sarah Ann and Margaret R. Gordon—and on the motion of John Gordon, the same is ordered to be certified.<sup>388</sup>

Military Records .... Joan W. Peters, complier.

---

<sup>388</sup> Fauquier County Minute Book, 352-3.

**Insert Family Tree diagram of  
Fisher Family. Use TMG.**



## Appendix 5

### **The Mountjoy Family**

This is the family of Honest John Martin's mother Mary Mountjoy. She was Elias Martin's first wife; their marriage bond is dated October 12, 1791.<sup>389</sup> <sup>390</sup>

#### ***Edward Mountjoy***

Edward Mountjoy<sup>391</sup> was born 1 January 1735/36 in Overwharton Parish, Stafford County, Virginia. He died 22 April 1777 in Fauquier County. He was the son of William Mountjoy and Phyllis (Phillis) Reilly. He married Sarah Chapman.

Sarah Chapman was probably born in Stafford County about 1736. She was probably the daughter of John and Rebekah Chapman of Hamilton Parish, Prince William (later Fauquier) County.

Edward signed the Westmoreland Declaration 27 February 1776.

---

<sup>389</sup> See chapter on John Martin's Ancestors.

<sup>390</sup> Cite web page. <http://www.familytreemaker.com/users/j/o/h/Stephen-C-Johnson/GENE8-0011.html>

<sup>391</sup> Carolyn Mountjoy Butterfield, "Edward Mountjoy-Sarah Chapman family group sheet" (undocumented); ancestral file numbers 2NBQ-5C and 2NBQ-6J, *Ancestral File*, version 4.19, Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City Utah. Other compilers are Mary Lou <sup>Collier</sup> and John A. McCall.

“Roused by danger, and alarmed at attempts, foreign and domestic, to reduce the people of this country to a state of abject and detestable slavery ...

“In testimony of the good faith which we resolve to execute this association we have this 27<sup>th</sup> day of Feb. 1766 in Va., put our hands and seals hereto”

One hundred and twenty signed the declaration including: Edward Mountjoy, Wm. J. Mountjoy, Thos. Mountjoy, John Mountjoy.<sup>392</sup>

In his twenties, he and his brother were engaged in shipping. He sold his boat in 1770. He lived in Stafford County but later settled on Licking Run in Fauquier County on land his grandfather acquired. He was a patriot and signed the “Leedstown Resolutions”. He died unexpectedly without a will leaving a widow and three children under five. He left his wife Sarah the plantation they had. She lived here while a widow.

They had three children, William, Edward and Mary.

### *William Mountjoy*

William Mountjoy was born 16 June, 1772 in Fauquier County. He died 4 February 1855 in Anderson County, Kentucky. He married Mary Fisher 19 April 1796 in Fauquier County. [get bond} [add more.]

**72. Edward Mountjoy**, born January 01, 1735/36 in Overwharton Parish, Stafford County, Virginia; died April 22, 1777 in Fauquier County, Virginia. He was the son of **144. William**

---

<sup>392</sup> Web page.?????????

**Mountjoy** and **145. Phyllis (Phillis) Reilly**. He married **73. Sarah Chapman** 1770.

**73. Sarah Chapman**, born Abt. 1736 in Probably Stafford County, Virginia; died 1815 in Fauquier County, Virginia. She was the daughter of **146. (John?) Chapman** and **147. Rebekah (Spouse of John Chapman) ---?---**.

Notes for Edward Mountjoy:

LDS AFN: 2NBQ-5C

See Family Tree Maker's Genealogy Site User Home Page Genealogy Report Ancestors of Stephen Cardwell Johnson.htm

1. Per J.W. Johnson notes, 1946-1970, Ref.JOHN0247 citing The Virginia Historical Register, Vol. 2, p.18: "The document referred to in the foregoing letter is now lodged in the archives of the Society, and is enclosed in a paper which has an endorsement upon it in these words: 'This remarkable document is indicative of the early patriotism of Va. gentlemen, was found among the papers of the late Henry Lee, Esq., Consul Gen'l to Algiers.'

"Document in Part

"Roused by danger, and alarmed at attempts, foreign and domestic, to reduce the people of this country to a state of abject and detestable slavery.....

"In testimony of the good faith which we resolve to execute this association we have this 27th day of Feb. 1766 in Va., put our hands and seals hereto.'

"Among some 120 names of the signatories, appeared the names of...

Edward Mountjoy

Wm. J. Mountjoy

Thos. Mountjoy

John Mountjoy

(Living during 1766)"

[More About](#) Edward Mountjoy:

Fact 1: Lived in Stafford Co., Va.

Fact 2: Signed the Westmoreland Declaration in Va. on 2/27/1766.

Fact 3: Mentioned in the will of Capt. William Mountjoy.

Fact 4: Lived in Stafford Co., Va. and on Licking Run, Fauquier Co., Va.

Fact 5: In his 20's he and his brother William were engaged in shipping.

Fact 6: Sold his boat in 1770 and settled on land in Hamilton Parish, Fauquier Co., Va.

Fact 7: Settled on land his grandfather acquired.

Fact 8: Was a patriot. Signed the "Leedstown Resolutions".

Fact 9: Died unexpectedly without a will leaving a widow and three children under 5 yr.

[Notes for](#) Sarah Chapman:

LDS AFN: 2NBQ-6J

1. Per Margaret Bisen Kinsey, 1977, Edward Mountjoy/Sarah Chapman Family Group Sheet No. 112: "Rev. Richard N. Herndon (who d. 1866) in writing the biography of his father, rev. John Chapman Herndon, showed his grandmother's maiden name as Sarah Chapman. This published in "Virginia Baptist Ministers, Series II", James Barnett Taylor, pp. 223-226. Richard N. Herndon grew up in Fauquier Co. and knew this from personal knowledge as well as his father's records."

[More About Sarah Chapman:](#)

Fact 1: Was left the plantation her husband Edward lived on while she was a widow.

[Children](#) of Edward Mountjoy and Sarah Chapman are:

- 36      i.      William Mountjoy, born June 16, 1772 in Fauquier County, Virginia; died February 04, 1855 in Anderson County, Kentucky; married Mary Fisher April 19, 1796 in Fauquier County, Virginia.
- ii.      Edward Mountjoy, born Abt. 1774; died Unknown; married Agnes Holtzclaw February 16, 1796 in Fauquier County, Virginia.

[Notes for Edward Mountjoy:](#)

1. Per Jennie May Fears Johnson quoting data from John Crittendon Mountjoy's paper for the Atlanta, Ill. Mountjoy reunion of 1934: "...William had seven boys and three girls. Edward had seven girls and three boys.

Edward's sons were George, William and Leroy - known also as Jeff. (Perhaps his name

was Leroy Jefferson Mountjoy)....

William (brother to Edward) moved to Ill. in 1850 - one of his sons was named Robert Fisher...Another of William's sons must have been Wiley for Cousin Crit says: 'In 1871 Uncle Wiley, with his large and interesting family came to Illinois from Ky.....' (Crit) had said the first William had seven sons, but he gives names of only five - Robert Fisher, Wiley, William, George, and Thomas".\*\* Ref.JOHN0192.

\*\*There appear to be some errors made by Crit in assigning children to Edward and William.  
SCJ 12/31/1998

[More About](#) Edward Mountjoy:

Fact 1: Went to Franklin Co. (later Anderson Co.), Ky. in 1813.

Fact 2: Served in the army in the Penn. Whiskey Tax Rebellion of 1791.

Fact 3: Located in Ky. on large tract owned in 1924 by Mrs. Sue Rhinehart.

Fact 4: Built a log house and operated it as a tavern.

Fact 5: Brought some slaves from Va.

Fact 6: Wade, a descendant of a slave, recalled fine running horses of the Mountjoys.

Fact 7: Two of the Mountjoy horses were "Grey Eagle" and "Wagner".

Fact 8: Called "Uncle Neddie" by his relatives.

Fact 9: His silver knee buckle owned by Mrs. Alleen Gilbert, g-dau. of Nancy Mountjoy.

Fact 10: His wine glass owned by Mrs. Alleen Gilbert, g-dau. of Nancy Mountjoy.

Fact 11: Supposedly had seven girls and three boys.

Fact 12: Went from Culpeper Co., Va. to Alton, Anderson Co., Ky. in 1813.

Fact 13: Was left by his grandfather 300 ac. next to that left his brother William.

- iii. Mary Mountjoy, born Abt. 1776; died Aft. 1837; married Elias Martin  
October 21, 1791 in Fauquier County, Virginia.

[More About](#) Mary Mountjoy:

Fact 1: Was left two slaves, Sarah and Peter by her grandfather. [check will.]

**Insert Family Tree diagram of  
Mountjoy Family. Use TMG.**



## Appendix 6

### **The Shumate Family**

Honest John Martin's sister Mildred Waggoner Martin married Lewis Shumate, Jr. He was in the fourth generation of French Huguenot immigrants with an extensive family of descendants in Fauquier County.

#### ***The Shumate Immigrant Jean de la Chaumette***

The Shumate family in Fauquier County has a rich heritage beginning in the early 18<sup>th</sup> century.

“The immigrant Jean de la Chaumette and his three immigrant sons have thousands of descendants spread throughout the United States today. ... all living Shumates and Shumate descendants can take great pride that their ancestors were pioneers who departed their home in Virginia–Fauquier County—and migrated southward and westward. ... The Shumates and their descendants have contributed

much to our great land, and they can be justifiably proud of their ancestors' accomplishments." <sup>393</sup> <sup>394</sup> The name is also spelled as Shoemate and Shuemake.

Two of his children were Daniel DeLa Shumate, Another son was John Shumate (II) who married Judith Bailey. Neither John nor Daniel could read.

### ***Daniel Shumate***

"... Daniel Shumate (b. circa 1712, England or Martinique ..., son of Jean de la Chaumette and Mrs. Elizabeth Bourgeois Bouvet. Tabitha [Dodson] and Daniel Shumate were married about 1769-1772 [They were married 8 October 1776 in Fauquier County {find bond}. He died 25 January 1802 in Fauquier County. She was born in 1749 in Richmond County and died 22 October 1803, also in Fauquier

---

<sup>393</sup> Robert S. Ripley, *The Shumate Family*, (Utica, Kentucky: McDowell Publications, 1992). This reference is an encyclopedic genealogy of the Shumate family with extensive analysis of its origins in France before the immigration as well as the American descendants. This is a "must have" book for anyone interested in the Shumate Family. Much of the information in this chapter comes from this source. This genealogy is lengthy and it is not suitable to reproduce it here in detail. We will give a basic outline and paraphrase the basics. The reader will have to look to this reference for supporting analysis and citations. Certain information is drawn from Von Stauffenberg. I have put extracts from his book in quotes to differentiate them from Ripley. [send note giving Mildred Martin's issue.](#)

<sup>394</sup> Theodor -Friedrich Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, (Washington, D.C.; Phyllis E. Hendricks Duplicating Services, 1964), Privately sold by Haskell D. Shumate, Star Rt. 6, Box 78, Union WV 24983. Copy in Fauquier Heritage Society library, Marshall, Virginia. This book gives a more detailed narrative of the family of Lewis and Ann Shumate and their children in Fauquier. I have woven quotes from this book into the narrative.

County.<sup>395]</sup> His other wives were Elizabeth Taliaferro and Mary Elizabeth Hoffman [who he married 1 February 1757 in Frederick, Maryland<sup>396</sup>]. By his three marriages, Daniel Shumate had sixteen children. Seven children were born to Tabitha Dodson. Tabitha was his third wife. Note that Ripley doubts this marriage.<sup>397</sup>

“When these seven children were born Daniel was in his sixties and seventies. These children were complainants in a suit filed against the executors of Daniel Shumate’s estate. The matter was settled and the executors, Thomas Shumate and Joseph George, were exonerated by the court of Fauquier Co. on 25 Jan 1802.”<sup>398</sup>  
The children of Lewis and Tibitha were:<sup>399</sup>

---

<sup>395</sup> Multiple compliers, “Daniel Shumate-Tabitha Dodson family group sheet” (undocumented); ancestral file numbers FHD6-32 and 8GHP-BD, *Ancestral File, version 4.19*, Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City Utah. There is extensive information on all Shumate lines in various ancestral files in the Family History Library. Some of the information is more recent than any published in the genealogical histories cited herein. The author has selected only a few to illustrate the direct lines of Lewis Shumate, Jr. and his wife Mildred Waggoner Martin.

<sup>396</sup> Multiple compliers, “Daniel Shumate-Mary Elizabeth Hoffman family group sheet” (undocumented); ancestral file numbers FHD6-32 and 1GTQ-H2L, *Ancestral File, version 4.19*, Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City Utah

<sup>397</sup> Ripley, *The Shumate Family*, 159. Ripley notes that Daniel Shumate and his wife Mary Elizabeth Hoffman were alive on 22 October 1770 because of a deed recorded on that date, then Daniel could not have married Tabitha third because Lewis, Tabitha’s son was born 1772.

<sup>398</sup> Mrs. Sherman Williams and The Rev. Silas Emmett Lucas., *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 2 volumes (Easley, South Carolina: Southern Historical Press, Inc., 1988), 1. This more recent book than the two cited above adds new information to the Shumate family.

1. Mary Shumate, born circa 1770 in Fauquier County. Her will was dated 10 December 1802 and proved on 22 October 1804. On 24 December 1787, Mary married Martin Parker in Fauquier County. She “died 1838, Lawrenceburg, Anderson Co., KY. ...[He was] b. circa 1762/66; d. June 1833, Lawrenceburg, KY.”<sup>400</sup>
2. Margaret “Peggy” Shumate was born about 1771 in Fauquier County. She died in Pendleton County, Virginia (now West Virginia) in 1819. On 4 May 1790, she married Harris Whitecotton (“b. 1769; d. circa 1803, Augusta Co., VA, son of George Whitecotton.”<sup>401</sup>) in Fauquier County. Harris and Peggy had James and Tabitha. Peggy moved to Oak Flat in Pendleton County. Peggy died suddenly as a result of hauling logs three miles to her cabin. James was over at Circleville courting the daughter of James Raines. Tabitha, about 15, rode bareback to fetch him and with the assistance of neighbors, buried their mother under the

---

It is particularly expands the descendants of Daniel Shumate and Tabitha Dodson. I have directly cited information from this source.

<sup>399</sup> Ripley, *The Shumate Family*, 156. Most of the information on the children comes from this reference, unless otherwise cited.

<sup>400</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants, Volume One*, 164. This reference lists twelve children.

<sup>401</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants, Volume One*, 166.

doorstep of her house.<sup>402</sup> James Whitecotton married Nancy Raines in 1820 and had eight children.

3. Lewis Shumate, born 1772. (See below).
4. Nancy Shumate, born circa 1775 in Fauquier County. She Married Edward Kinney in Fauquier County 26 July 26 1796. “Nancy was born circa 1872. She was “under age” when she married Edward Denny (Kinney) on 25 July 1796. They apparently left Fauquier County after 1803, and it is presumed they moved “west.” Their descendants have not been located.”<sup>403</sup>
5. Strother D. Shumate. He was “born 20 Jan 1781, Fauquier Co., VA and died 3 Dec 1834, Greenville Co., SC. He married in April 11803 Anna McDavid (born circa 1787 Greenville, Co., SC; d. 3 Dec 1883, Anderson Co., SC.”<sup>404</sup>
6. Charlotte Shumate (Conway.) “ Charlotte was born circa 1873 and died 1885, aged 102. She married on 26 Oct 1801 Peter Conway (d. circa 1825/27), son of Peter Hack and Mary James Conway.”<sup>405</sup>

---

<sup>402</sup> The author cites *Pioneer Women of Western Virginia* by Beadell. [Improve.]

<sup>403</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 59.

<sup>404</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 166. This reference lists nine children.

<sup>405</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 167. This reference lists ten children.

7. Daniel Shumate. "Daniel was born circa 1783 and died circa 1843 in Kemper Co., MS. He married in Oct 1805, Jane McDavid (d. circa 1854/60, Kemper Co., MS) daughter of David McDavid."<sup>406</sup>

*Tabitha Dodson, Wife of Daniel Shumate*

*Charles Dodson, Sr.*

"The ancestry of the Dodsons of Pittsylvania, Halifax, Henry and Patrick counties has definitely been traced back to Charles Dodson, Sr. ...who lived in Old Rappahannock County and was born circa 1649 ...and married Ann \_\_\_\_ ...about 1678-80."<sup>407</sup> They had nine children including Thomas Dodson, Sr.

*Thomas Dodson*

Thomas was "born 15 May 1681 in Old Rappahannock (now Richmond) Co. VA. He died circa 1739/40 [21 November 1740 in North Farnham<sup>408</sup>] in Richmond County. He married Mary Durham ...the daughter of Thomas and Dorothy Smoot Durham [1 August 1701 in North Farnham, Richmond County<sup>409</sup>] ...[she was] born \_\_\_\_\_

---

<sup>406</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 167. This reference lists eight children.

<sup>407</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 4. This reference extensively develops the first three generations of Dodsons.

<sup>408</sup> Multiple compilers, "Thomas Dodson-Mary Durham family group sheet" (undocumented); ancestral file numbers H98Q-GD and 12TH-DQ, *Ancestral File*, version 4.19, Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City Utah

<sup>409</sup> Multiple compilers, "Thomas Dodson-Mary Durham family group sheet" FHL *Ancestral File*.

5 June 1868 in Old Rappahannock County [and died 1 January 1717 in Richmond County<sup>410</sup>]. Her father, Thomas, [was born 6 March 1661 in North Farnham, Richmond County and died 30 May 1715 in Richmond County.] ... [Her mother was the daughter of] William and Jane Smoot... After the death of Thomas Dodson, the widow Mary Durham Dodson married Robert Galbreath on 29 Sept 1743, Richmond Co., VA.<sup>411</sup> Thomas and Mary had nine children including Abraham.

*Abraham Dodson*

“Abraham was born 4 April 1723, Richmond Co., VA. He moved with others of his family to Fauquier Co. where he died about 1768 [25 October 1768 at Hamilton, Fauquier County. His will was proved in Richmond.<sup>412</sup>]...He married Barbara (surname unknown but perhaps Russell [Barbara Russell was born 9 November 1727 in Farnham, Richmond County and died after 1780 in Fauquier County.]<sup>413</sup>) in Richmond Co. where their first child was born. On 4 Dec 1762, Abraham and Barbary Dodson were received by baptism into the fellowship of Broad Run Baptist Church, Fauquier Co. Abraham died while a member of this congregation. Barbary

---

<sup>410</sup> Multiple compliers, “Thomas Dodson-Mary Durham family group sheet” FHL *Ancestral File*.

<sup>411</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 4.

<sup>412</sup> Multiple compliers, “Abraham Dodson-Barbara Russell family group sheet” (undocumented); ancestral file numbers 4RV7-DF and 4RV7-FL, *Ancestral File*, version 4.19, Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City Utah.

<sup>413</sup> Multiple compliers, “Abraham Dodson-Barbara Russell family group sheet” *Ancestral File*, FHL.

Dodson evidently had problems with her faith, for the notation is given beside her name on the membership roll “consigned 1772.” The meaning of this is not clear but it could mean she as banished or excluded from membership because of some nonconformity. On 29 July 1780, Joseph Drury was appointed to the task of bringing Sister Barbary Dodson “to our next meeting to answer her Censor which has laid a long time.

“In 1768, shortly before his death, Abraham Dodson and William Stamps were two of the trustees of the Baptist Church to whom Jacob Hays and wife, Katherine, sold one acre ‘being part of the land where Hays now lives.’ Apparently this was the site of Broad Run Church.”<sup>414</sup> They had five children one of whom was Tabitha who married Daniel Shumate and one of whom was Mary who married Bailey Shumate, nephew of Daniel.<sup>415</sup>

---

<sup>414</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 21.

<sup>415</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 93. This reference has a highly interesting account of Tabitha's brother Enoch's stormy relationship with his church, Turkey Creek Baptist, in Abbeville County, South Carolina.

## **Lewis Shumate**

Lewis Shumate was the son of Daniel Shumate and Tabitha Dodson. Lewis was born circa 1772 in Fauquier County. He died in [probate date?] May, 1861.<sup>416 417</sup> “He married circa 1792 Mary Chadwell, who was born at sea, circa 1772/3 and was the daughter of Joseph Chadwell.”<sup>418</sup> [take another look for mar. bond.]

“Lewis served in the War of 1812 in Captain Seth Comb’s Company, 85 Regt., Virginia Militia, and was later attached to Bramham’s 41<sup>st</sup> Regt. At Camp Alexandria outside of Washington, D.C. He was enrolled on 30 July 1814 and was dismissed on 2 August 1814. He lived the remainder of this life on his farm near Warrenton, VA.”<sup>419</sup>

---

<sup>416</sup> Lewis Shumate will (1850) Fauquier County Will Book 29: 214, County Clerk’s Office, Warrenton, Virginia. The will was dated 22 March 1850. He is explicitly identified as “Jr.” A 19 October 1855 codicil specified that the estate of his son Murphy to be held for Murphy’s daughter Mariah White in trust for her children. His explicit use of “Jr.” is not clear since his father was Daniel. It would make more sense for his son to use the term. Perhaps there was an older cousin living and his use of Junior was to distinguish himself from his cousin.

<sup>417</sup> The Lewis Shumate genealogy is drawn from the Shumate Family history by Ripley. Except Ripley missed his marriage to Mary Chadwell.

<sup>418</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 165. Inexplicably, this reference misses completely Lewis’ marriage to Fanny Stollard.

<sup>419</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 165. The enrolled date of 1814 is probably an error and should read 1812. It is unlikely that he served only three days.

*The Shumate Family*

Circa 1800 he married Fanny Stallard, probably in Rockingham County where he may have lived for a few years. Fanny was born circa 1772 and died circa 1815.



He and Fanny lived near Bleak in Fauquier County off Rt. 602 near the Warrenton-Fauquier airport. The home is described as follows:

Location: From Bleak, Virginia, proceed northwest 3.5 miles on Route #602 thence northeast .6 miles on private road. [Now Timbuktu Lane.] Built 1809.

Owners: Lewis Shumate, 1809-1863; William A. Cowne, Sr. 1863- ; Wm. A. **Cowne** **[check spelling]**, Jr., and Cameron Cowne. Present owners Edger Messick and Cameron Cowne. It is a two story frame house with attic. There are two big stone chimneys at the ends of the original part of the house. A later edition gives the house the form of the letter T... The house has immense oak sills big enough for a barn. The oak framing is put together with wooden pins.

The old part of the house with the two big chimneys was built in 1809 by either Lewis Shumate or his father. Lewis Shumate was the grandfather of Lathem Shumate, the present auctioneer who lives about two miles above Opal on Route #15. William A. Cowne, Jr. built the addition to the house."<sup>420</sup> <sup>421</sup>

Lewis's will was probated in 1861. Eleven children were listed in his will: Charlotte, Triplett, Polly, wife of Richard W. Gains, Murphy, Duff, Augusta, wife of Mr. Davis, Lewis [husband of Mildred Martin], Minor, Amanda and Walker.

By his wife Mary Chadwell he had:

---

<sup>420</sup> The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County*, 481-481. Research by M. D. Gore, Summerduck, Virginia, May 13, 1937. Cameron Crowne, Midland, Virginia, owner of the southeastern part of the farm provided the information.

<sup>421</sup> **Cite interview with Ed and Betty Messick, 22 August 1999.**

1. Charlotte Shumate. "Born circa 1793, Fauquier County, VA; died 1861."<sup>422</sup>
2. Triplett Shumate, born circa 1801 in Fauquier County and died sometime after 1850 (the date of his<sup>423</sup> father's will.) "... he does not seem to be living in Fauquier County."<sup>424</sup> "Married an Evans or a Milton."<sup>425</sup>
3. Tifesta (Polly) Shumate, born circa 1797 in Fauquier County. She may have married 22 December, 1822, Richard H. Gaines of Fauquier County, although there is some doubt. "The Gaines family was spread largely over Culpeper, Stafford, Fauquier, and Prince William Counties and seems to trace its many branches back to a common ancestor, Richard Gaynes who came to Jamestown about 1620."<sup>426</sup> "...moved to Brentwood TN."<sup>427</sup>
4. Murphy Chadwell Shumate, "born 7 Dec. 1799, Fauquier County, VA; died 12 Feb. 1883, Leesburg, VA; married (1) 27 Nov 1827, Maria Hutchinson (b. 7 April

---

<sup>422</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 165. However Ripley thinks she was born circ 1811. However, if children are likely to be named in wills in descending order of birth, then the 1793 date would be preferred.

<sup>423</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 165.

<sup>424</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 221.

<sup>425</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 165.

<sup>426</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 223.

<sup>427</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 165.

1806; d. 15 Sept 1818), daughter of Reuben Hutchinson; (2) 27 October 1831, Margaret Elgin (b. 22 Feb 1800; d. 1 March 1837) daughter of Gustavus and Elizabeth Hamilton Elgin; (3) 12 Dec 1837, Diadema Elgin (b 30 Nov 1803, Loudoun Co., VA; d. 13 Nov 1886, Loudoun Co.) daughter of Walter and Diadama Pancoast Elgin.”<sup>428</sup> In 1848, Maria Louise Shumate, Murphy’s daughter, presumably by his first wife, married Redmond F. White also in Loudoun County. Von Stauffenberg cautions that we do not have proof that this Murphy was the son of Lewis and Ann, but the later research by Williams and Lucas provides specifics that are convincing that Murphy is their son.

By his wife Fanny Stallard, he had:

5. Lewis Shumate, Jr. (See below.)
6. Duff Shumate, born circa 1802 in Fauquier County and died after 1850. On September 22, 1823, he married Harriet Hickerson, also of Fauquier County, daughter of Hosea Hickerson. Perhaps his first name was Elias “...we have no record of Duff’s will in Fauquier county, so it is probable that he settled elsewhere.”<sup>429</sup>

---

<sup>428</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 166. This reference is much more detailed on Murphy’s family and seems the most reliable.

<sup>429</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 221.

7. Augusta Anne Shumate, born 28 February 1803.<sup>430</sup> She married Robert Davis on 17 March 1823 in Fauquier County. “They settled at Antioch, TN, near Nashville.”<sup>431</sup>
8. Augustus Shumate, born circa 1804 in Fauquier County and died in 1892 in Highland County, Virginia. He is believed to have married Elizabeth Pence about 1836 in Rockingham County. He is believed to be a son of Lewis’s, but he is not mentioned in his father’s will so there is an element of doubt. They had nine children. Von Stauffenberg details the children.<sup>432</sup>
9. Minor Shumate, born probably in 1808 in Fauquier County. He may have settled in Highland County, Virginia and had a wife named Elizabeth. “ ... he may well have moved westward, emulating his brother Walker Shumate, who settled in Missouri”.<sup>433</sup>
10. Walker D. Shumate, born 12 October 1809 and died 27 July 1872 in Saint Louis County, Missouri. He married Sarah Wheeler Williams, youngest child of William Walter Williams and his wife Henrietta Wheeler. The Williams were originally Fauquier County people and a grandfather and a great-uncle of

---

<sup>430</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 166.

<sup>431</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 166.

<sup>432</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 228.

Sarah's were revolutionary veterans. "(Charles Williams, the great uncle was General Charles Williams, an associate with Anthony Wayne at Fallen Timbers battle.)<sup>434</sup> Sarah's elder brother did not move westward. Instead he went to law school at William and Mary, set up his practice at Norfolk and married the socially prominent Martha Armstead there."<sup>435</sup> Sarah died 30 April 1836 leaving two children. Walker then married Susan Quisenberry, daughter of James and Eliza Quisenberry, formerly of Orange County, Virginia. Walker married a third time, 9 September 1851, to Louise (Dorsett) Massy, a widow, whose husband Captain Massy had died. Massy is believed to have been Captain Mathew Strong Massey, formerly of Pennsylvania, a Revolutionary 'mascot', War of 1812, commissioned Captain in 1823 and stationed at St. Louis. He died in 1832. "Walker D. Shumate died at Saint Louis on 27 July 1872. He left several children."<sup>436</sup> Williams says she was "Mary Louise born 1800 in Ohio, widow of Matthew Strong Massey and daughter of Walter Dorsett."<sup>437</sup>

---

<sup>433</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 223.

<sup>434</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 224.

<sup>435</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 224. The author notes that this branch of the family is written up in *The Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, Volume IV, compiled by the late Professor Liman G. Tyler.

<sup>436</sup> Von Stauffenberg, *The Shumate Family: A Genealogy*, 225. The children are given in some detail.

<sup>437</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 166. Walker's and Murphy's descendants are developed in this reference, but none of their siblings' are.

11. Amanda Mary (Fanny) Shumate, born circa 1815 in Fauquier County. On 18 August 1835, in Fauquier County, she married a cousin, John Taliaferro Shumate, who was the son of Taliaferro Shumate. "They moved to Nashville, TN."<sup>438</sup>

### ***Lewis Shumate, Jr. and his Wife Mildred Waggoner Martin***

Lewis Shumate, Jr. was born in 1801 in Fauquier County and died 24 December 1877 also in Fauquier County at age 76.<sup>439</sup> He was the son of Lewis Shumate and his wife Fanny Stallard.

He married Mildred Waggoner Martin, daughter of Elias Martin and his second wife Mary. (See Elias Martin chapter.) Mildred Waggoner Martin was born 22 September 1806. Her death date is unknown. Her will is not recorded in Fauquier.

However, she must have died before age 43, because she was not mentioned in her husband's will dated 22 March 1850.<sup>440</sup>

---

<sup>438</sup> Williams and Lucas, *The Dodson (Dotson) Family of North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia: A History and Genealogy of Their Descendants*, 1: 166. This reference says she was born 1806 and gives 1790-1800 dates for her husband.

<sup>439</sup> Lewis Shumate entry, Fauquier County Deaths, 1853-1896: 81, Clerk of the Court, Warrenton, Virginia. He died of consumption. His mother was not named. His consort was Mildred W. Shumate. Information was by Bailey Shumate, his son. Their graves are unknown.

<sup>440</sup> will dated 22 March, 1850. Book, page et.c.

Rev. John Ogilvie, pastor of Upper Goose Creek Baptist church, married Mildred and Lewis Shumate 12 January 1829.<sup>441</sup> She was 22, he was about 28. Lewis and Mildred became members of the Broad Run Baptist Church and, on Sunday, 6 November 1847 were “received and baptised.”<sup>442</sup> In 1849, Lewis and Mildred were “dismissed to form a new church about to be constituted at Warrenton.”<sup>443</sup>

They had the following children, about every two years, like clockwork:<sup>444</sup> <sup>445</sup>

1. Elias Martin Shumate, born 11 November 1829. He died in infancy 8 October 1832. He was named after his mother’s father.

---

<sup>441</sup> Fauquier County Marriage Book 4: 10. The return of marriages by John Ogilvies, 24 August 1829. He also married Mildred’s brother John to Susan A. Fisher, perhaps, in a double wedding ceremony. Book 4:279 lists the bond. See John Martin Family chapter for discussion of the double wedding.

<sup>442</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries’ Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 342. Reporting the minutes of the Broad Run Baptist Church, New Baltimore, Fauquier County, Virginia.

<sup>443</sup> Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries’ Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 344.

<sup>444</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible. All dates given for this family are from the bible. The citations in the ancestral file citation cited next exactly match the bible entries with one exception. The ancestral file has a citation for a Bailey Shumate born about 1852. I have left this out. I believe that Lewis Baylor or Bagby and Bailey Shumate are the same person. Bailey Shumate shows up in later records, but not Baylor or Bagby. One suspects the ancestral file information came from the bible. [\[contact Marie Minton Hassell.\]](#)

<sup>445</sup> Donald G. Martin, compiler, “Lewis Shumate, Jr.-Mildred Waggoner Martin family group sheet” (undocumented); ancestral file numbers AFN: BP72-N7 and AFN-29CM-44, *Ancestral File, version 4.19*, Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City Utah. Other compilers: Marie Minton Hassell and William Darrell Kieffer. The citations in the source match the bible entries with the exception of Bailey Shumate mentioned in the previous footnote; and adds two children to John and Mary Burroughs, Nannie and Ethel. The birthdays for these two children are cited exactly, so one wonders what the source was. The ancestral file also has all the Burroughs children born in Philadelphia, clearly an error. [\[check F.C.\]](#)

2. **George Henry Shumate**, born 6 December 1830. He married Mary N. Ogilvie 31 May 1853. He served in the Black Horse Cavalry.

**George Harden (Henry?) Shumate** Y N Enl. April 25, 1861; cpl.; discharged October 31, 1861 deafness. Y 3rd Cpl.

“George Harden Shumate .. was the husband of Mary N. (Ogilvie) Shumate whom he married May 23, 1853.”<sup>446</sup> [check Fq. Marriages for names. Harden or Henry? Probably just initial.]

Mrs. Caldwell, in an undated letter written in 1862 notes: “A few days ago several prisoners were brought in, they were captured at Culpepper Co House. George Shumate was one, they were put in the Court House and strictly guarded. Most of them, 7 in number, were without coats - the gentlemen and ladies supplied them with clothing and eatables - they were taken to Washington. I could freely shed tears on account of Mr. Shumate - he was not allowed even to write to his family & had not time sufficient between his being brought to town and his leaving in the cars for Washington for his wife to learn of the news of his capture so as to have come in town. I am sorry for both of them -separation is too painful under easy circumstances, but doubly so under these severe trials.”<sup>447</sup>

[LDS sites says he son of Lewis Shumate and Mildred W. Martin. See The Martin Boys.... }

---

<sup>446</sup> Welton, “My Heart Is So Rebellious,” *The Caldwell Letters, 1861-1865*, 143.

<sup>447</sup> Welton, “My Heart Is So Rebellious,” *The Caldwell Letters, 1861-1865*, 144.

From Martin family bible. George Henry Shumate, born 6 December 1830.

3. Mary Elizabeth Shumate, born 10 December 1832. She married John B.

Burroughs 5 January 1853. Their children were:

[check Fauquier Births]

- a. Mary E. Burroughs, born 10 December 1853, (on her mother's birthday).
  - b. Mildred S. Burroughs, born 9 August 1857.
  - c. S. S. Wilton Burroughs, born 10 December, 1858. (again, on his mother's birthday!)
  - d. \_\_\_ G. Burroughs, daughter, born 23 June 1860.
  - e. John B. Burroughs, born 19 December 1861.
  - f. Nannie Burroughs, born 21 January 1865.
  - g. Ethel Alice Burroughs, born 23 December 1874. Her mother would have been 42 at this birth.
4. John Walker Shumate, born 4 September 1834. He married Mary Weaver who St. James Episcopal Church in Warrenton in 1863. Their daughter Alice Shumate married Howard Johnson of Opal. Their daughter Louise Mabel Johnson married James Clinton Buchanan, parents of Alice Jane Buchanan who married Ernest Lee Childs, Jr. (See chapter 6.)<sup>448</sup>

---

<sup>448</sup> Interview, Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs, 25 May 2002.

5. James William Shumate, born 12 December 1836. He died 3 November 1838.
6. Nancy Martin Shumate, born 30 September 1838.
7. Jane Amanda Shumate, born 29 December 1840.
8. Lucy M. Shumate, born December 1842.
9. Mildred W. Shumate, born October 1844.
10. Alice Shumate, born June 1846.
11. Ella Shumate, born 26 June 1848.
12. Lewis Baylor (or Bagby) Shumate, [His correct name is believed to be Bailey] born 15 July 1850.<sup>449</sup>

*Bailey Shumate lived near Catlett.*

Located one and one fourth miles southeast of Catlett, Virginia, in the south angle formed where the railroad crosses over cedar Run, cross railroad at first by-road on southeast and proceed several hundred yards to house on the hill. Date built not known.

The rear of the house with the dormer windows and big stone chimney is very old. The Federals destroyed all but this part of the old house. Bailey Shumate, father of Daniel, rebuilt the front part after the War. Bailey Shumate must have built the original. Owners: Bailey Shumate; Daniel Shumate; Golder Shumate, present owner.

---

<sup>449</sup> Elias Martin Family Bible. The bible entry gives the two alternative Christian names.

The house stands on high ground overlooking Catlett to the northeast and part of Calverton to the southwest. It faces northwest. ... It is a two story house. The front part is frame and the rear log. ...

The place consists of 155 acres but Bailey Shumate probably owned from Calverton to Cedar Run. His son, Sidney, owns the part nearest Calverton. Sidney Shumate is manager of the town of Warrenton.

During the Civil War, the Federals camped on the part of the farm now owned by Sidney Shumate. They cut down some of the stumps of oak trees into the shape of chairs. Formerly one could see where they had thrown up dirt around the edges of tents to keep out water; in the grove of trees near the railroad, they dug a long trench.

A Nocturnal Visit. At one time General Pope had his headquarters in the house described above. One rainy night, several of Jackson's men managed to elude the Union pickets and got to the Shumate house. General Pope was asleep. They took his coat, cap and sabre and escaped. Mr. Sidney Shumate says that this incident is related in one of the school histories.

The Ruins. When Bailey Shumate returned after the War, he found that the Federals had destroyed most of his house, so he had to rebuild.

The Graveyard. About 75 yards northeast of the house is the family graveyard, with tombstones to Bailey, Daniel Shumate, and others.<sup>450</sup> [visit cem.]

---

<sup>450</sup> The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County Virginia* (Berryville, Virginia: Virginia Book Company, 1978), 753-754. Sidney Shumate, Warrenton provided the information. Research by M.D. Gore, Sumerduck, Virginia, February 15, 1937. "The material included in this volume was compiled during the mid-1930's, during

[Look for Lewis Hardin Shumate as possible relation. See BH Roster. "George Harden [Henry?] Shumate .. was the husband of Mary N. (Ogilvie) Shumate whom he married May 23, 1853. But we have George Henry as Mary's husband. [LDS says Lewis Hardin is son of Mildred and Lewis!.]

**Insert Family Tree diagram of  
Shumate Family. Use TMG.**

---

the Great Depression by local, historically-minded workers employed by the Writers' Program of the Works Projects Administration.



## Appendix 7

# Martin Family Germantown Land Transactions

Analyzed by William A. Martin

Because of his extensive study of the Martin family in his book, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia*, the author requested the assistance of Mr. Martin in determining the ancestry of “Honest” John Martin by analyzing the various Germantown land transactions. The following is Mr. Martin's kind response.<sup>451</sup>

... The map of Germantown, shown on page 1 of the *News and Notes* from the Fauquier Historical Society, Spring-Summer 1993, you enclosed has been replaced through extensive research of the deeds associated with Germantown since it was first divided up (deeded) in 1729 into the 1800s.

This is mentioned in my book on pages 51 and 52. The *Germanna Record*, Nr. 2, is devoted to mapping out Germantown and showing the ownership of the land well in to the 1800s. [On the next page is an enlarged version of the map from page ??]

---

<sup>451</sup> William A. Martin, letter to Lynn Hopewell (6353 D Street, Springfield, OR 97478), May 23, 1995.

of what Germantown looked like in 1729 after the smoke cleared away and the deeds were let.

Although not shown, not everyone has the equal share that was determined in 1724, and this is because several transactions had occurred among the members of the group prior to 1729, and the 1729 deeds only reflect the land ownership at that time. There are no records saying what happened between 1724 and 1729.

In the 1729 plat, lot 11 (upper and lower) was the original Martin place and lot. **15** was the German Glebe. "A" marks the approximate location of the Martin Cemetery. "B" marks the approximate location of the birthplace of Chief Justice, John Marshall--just for reference.

Referring to the map sort of helps in understanding what I want to portray and then I can discuss the ramification of what I point out.

I'm not going into (every) who owned what so much as I want to point out Martin ownership over the years after the original deeds were let.

**Lot 7** (upper and lower) was John Jacob Rector's lot, even though he was dead by 1729. The trustees provided an original deed to his widow, Elizabeth (Fishback) Rector, who later married John Marr.

- + deeded to Elizabeth's son, Harmon Rector, in 1746.
- + inherited by Harmon Rector, Jr., on the death of his father in 1789.
- + deeded by Harmon Rector, Jr., to John Martin in 1799.
- + inherited by Louisa Martin from her father, John Martin, in 1823.

+ deeded by Louisa (Martin) McLaren and her husband, Neale McLaren, to Jacob Weaver in 1833.

**Lot 11** (upper and lower) was John Joseph Martin's lot. John Joseph Martin probably died about 1758-59 at Germantown, and his 2nd wife, Eve, lived until about 1778-1781. Although no will has been found, it would appear that Eve inherited the upper half and the oldest son, Henry, inherited the lower half when John Joseph Martin died.

+ The upper half was in the possession of Eve Martin, the widow, in 1777

+ The upper half was owned by John Joseph Martin's son of the second wife, Eve, John Martin in 1783 and later years, apparently inherited.

+ *The upper half was inherited by Henry Martin from his father, John Martin, in 1823.*

+ The lower half was deeded in 1772 by John Joseph Martin's eldest son, Henry Martin, to his son, Samuel Martin. From this we can assume Henry inherited the land from his father and then deeded it to his son. Samuel still owned the land in 1790, but had been living in Kentucky for several years.

+ The lower half was deeded by Samuel Martin to Tilman Weaver in 1796.

**Lot 12** was John Kemper's lot and at his death was in the possession of his son, Henry Kemper.

+ The upper half was deeded by Henry Kemper to John Martin in 1760 and John still owned it in 1790.

+ The *upper* half was inherited by Henry Martin from his father, John Martin, in 1823.

+ The lower half was deeded by Henry Kemper to Jeremiah Darnall in 1764.

+ The lower half was deeded by Jeremiah Darnall to John Shanks in 1773.

+ The lower half was deeded by John Shanks to John Misner in 1784, who still owned it 1790.

+ The lower half was deeded by John Misner to Dunlap Fisher in 1795.

+ The lower half was deeded by Dunlap Fisher to John Martin in 1818.

+ The lower half was inherited by Elizabeth Martin (who married William Weaver) from her father, John Martin, in 1823.

**Lot 13** was Harman Fishback's lot.

+ The upper half was deeded by Harman Fishback and his son, Harmon, Jr., to John Martin in 1775 and John still owned it in 1790.

+ *The upper half was inherited by Henry Martin from his father, John Martin, in 1823.*

+ The lower half was deeded by Harman Fishback and his son, Harmon, Jr., to John Shanks.

+ The lower half was deeded by John Shanks to John Misner in 1784.

+ The lower half was deeded by John Misner to Dunlap Fisher in 1795.

+ The lower half was deeded by Dunlap Fisher to John Martin in 1818.

+ The lower half was inherited by Elizabeth Martin (who married William Weaver)

from her father, John Martin, in 1823.

**Lot 15** was the Germantown Glebe, but was apparently being “held” by Jacob Holtzclaw.

+ In 1754, Jacob Holtzclaw and John Hoffman (one of three trustees of the grant along with Holtzclaw and John Fishback, and John Fishback died in 1733) sold the upper half to Tilman Weaver, John Kemper, John Joseph Martin, Harman Fishback, and Peter Hitt, the surviving members of the original colony.

+ In 1771, Fishback, Hitt, and the heirs of Weaver and Kemper, deeded the upper half to Tilman Martin, son of John Joseph Martin.

+ In 1779, Tilman Martin died and his widow deeded to upper half to Jererniah Danal1.

“So a recap of where we stood in 1823 looks like this:

lot 7 went out of Martin control in 1833.

lot 11 *upper* was in the hands of **Henry Martin in 1823**, s/o of John Martin.

lot 11 *lower* went out of Martin control in 1796.

lot 12 *upper* was in the hands of Henry Martin in 1823, s/o of John Martin.

lot 12 *lower* was in the hands of Elizabeth Martin in 1823 and she married William Weaver.

lot 13 *upper* was in the hands of Henry Martin in 1823, s/o of John Martin.

lot 13, *lower* was in the hands of Elizabeth Martin in 1823 and she married William Weaver.

lot 15 *upper* went out of Martin hands in 1779.

Henry Martin, son of John Martin, and (believed to be the grandson of John Joseph Martin--I say believed to be because no one has to my satisfaction solved the John Martin dilemma of why he did not leave anything to his children of the first wife, Caty, if these are the same John Martin) was living on the upper half of the original Martin lot and had the adjoining upper half of lot 12 and upper half of lot 13--the only Martin family still living on Germantown land.

This would certainly indicate that no John Martin was living on any Germantown land after John Martin died in 1823; however, there was an 1807 deed for 70 acres on Licking Run (next to, but not of, the original Germantown grant) from Tilman Martin to his son, Hezekiah Martin, and in 1813, Hezekiah Martin deeded the same land to John Martin (Hezekiah's uncle as John and Tilman were brothers, we think). This land was not transferred at John's death and that may be because he had already deeded it to one or more of his heirs of the first marriage. As yet, no deed(s) have surfaced showing what happened to these 70 acres.

#### THOUGHTS:

It has long been a puzzle why John Martin did not leave any of his estate to first children. Were some or all of them dead, and if only some, who? Was he mad at them? Did he already settle with them while he was alive? Of all the possibilities, the latter shown here seems to be the most likely, but there is always the specter that we are dealing with two John Martins.

In the case of your "Honest" John Martin, b. ca. 1800, a case, albeit it weak at this point, could be made that he was John Martin, Jr., and that he was living on

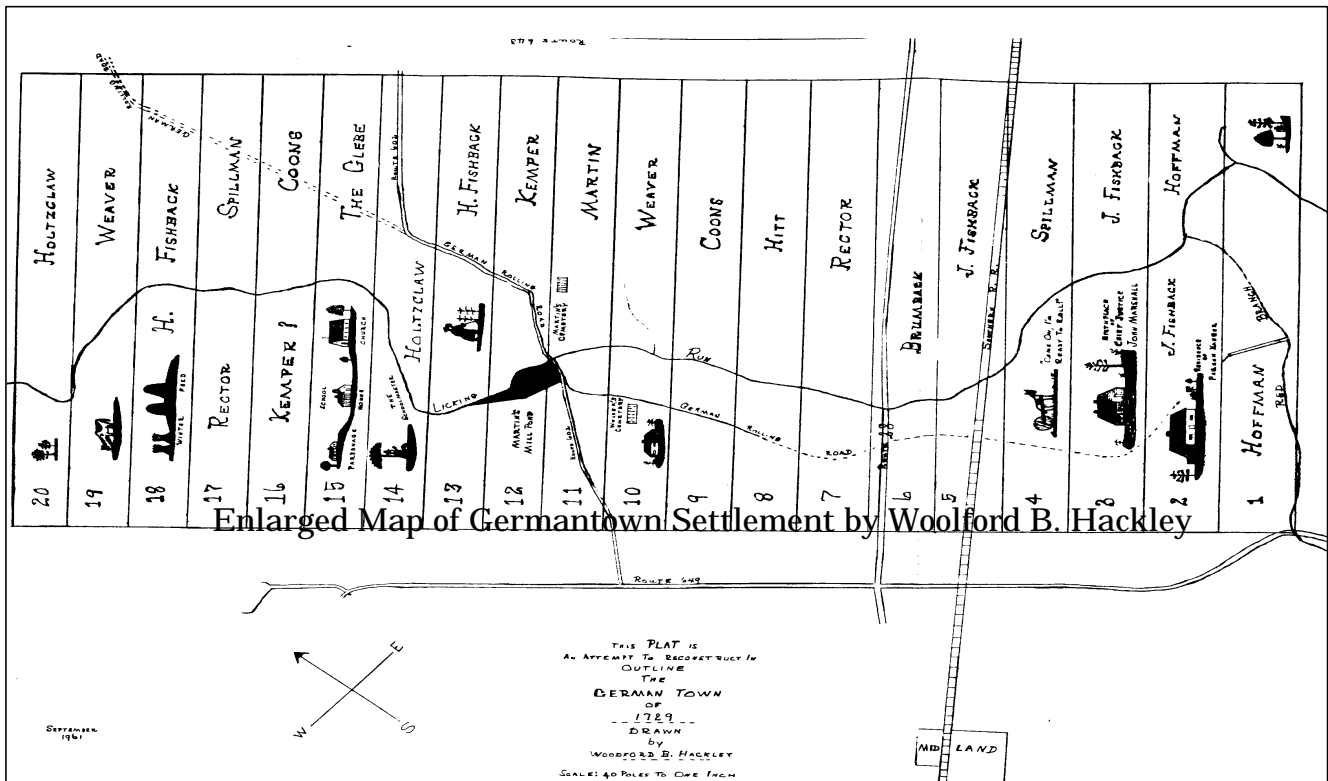
the unaccounted for 70 acres that John, Sr., got from his nephew, Hezekiah. If true that at least puts him “at” Germantown since the land was next to Germantown.

This leaves us with the wife situation. There is a Fauquier County marriage record for a John Martin (doesn't say Jr., but they rarely do) and Catherine Stephenson in Dec 1807, which would mean that this John had to be born (probably) no later than 1787, and if this is “Honest” John, it would mean he married more than once to have a wife, Susan A. [Fisher].

If we have the right John here, there is a good case for a second marriage since "Honest" John and Susan's first born, Margaret, was not born until 1836 [We now know that their first born was William Thomas, in 183, a year after their marriage.]

It's also possible (maybe even more probable) that “Honest” John Martin was another grandson or even a great-grandson of John Joseph Martin through one of the other sons, and I now know that Peter Martin, shown on page 105, is the 12th and youngest son of John Joseph Martin, of Eve, born in 1741.

One cannot overlook that most, if not all, the Fauquier Martins up through the mid-1800s were descendants of John Joseph Martin. ....





## About the Author



Lynn Hopewell was born December 19, 1937 in Portsmouth, Virginia. He is the son of the late Harry Lynn Hopewell and Charlotte Ross Mathews. Fauquier County was the home of his great-grandmother, Susan Payne Jones, the daughter of Black Horse Cavalryman Strother Seth Jones and Lucy Virginia Stewart, of Mt. Airy, near Dudie.

He resides in Warrenton, Virginia where he has been Senior Warden of St. James Episcopal Church, a member of the Town of Warrenton Architectural Review Board, a director of the Fauquier Historical Society, and Chairman of the Board of Trustees of Wakefield School. He is a member of the John Marshall Club and the Fauquier Club. He was a chairman of Fauquier County's Historic Resources Committee.

He was a Contributing Writer to *Fauquier Magazine* and writes a column of opinion—"A Fauquier Point of View"—for the *Fauquier Citizen* newspaper.

*About the Author*

He has been active in state-wide public service. He was appointed by Governor John Dalton to the Virginia Board of Commerce and served as vice chairman. He was appointed by Governor George Allen to the Champion Schools Commission, and from 1996-1999, served as a member and Vice Chairman of the State Council of Higher Education for Virginia, the state government body that coordinates Virginia's system of higher education. He is a member of the Board of Governors of the Virginia Institute for Public Policy.

He began his professional work as an engineer for the Central Intelligence Agency and traveled to over 45 countries. He later worked as an executive in the high-tech industry in Northern Virginia and for the last twenty years has been a financial and investment advisor in private practice. He is chairman of The Monitor Group, Inc. an investment advisory firm in Fairfax, Virginia.

He received his A. A. from the College of William and Mary in Norfolk in 1958, his B.S. in physics from Virginia Polytechnic Institute in 1961, and his M.B.A. from Harvard Business School in 1968.

He first learned of the Black Horse Cavalry when studying the genealogy of his mother's family and was given his great-great grandfather's Confederate Veteran's medal. Strother Jones moved from Fauquier to Portsmouth for a while after the war and his daughter Susan married a local boy. Strother is buried in Warrenton Cemetery.

Lynn has been working on the history of the Black Horse for over twenty-five years. He provided the research for civil war artists Don Prechtel's painting "Native

Sons: the Black Horse Cavalry” and Mort Künstler’s painting “The Bravest of the Brave: Black Horse Cavalry in Warrenton, Virginia, February 22, 1863”.

He is married to the former Leslie Ann Lindsay of Arlington. They have a blended family of five children; Harry, Matt, Todd, Erin and Stewart.

He has spoken about the Black Horse Cavalry on many occasions in Fauquier and has written several articles on them for *Fauquier Magazine*. His research for his book on the Black Horse, *The Bravest of the Brave: A History of the Black Horse Cavalry*, continues.



## Bibliography

### *Manuscript Sources*

On November 7, 1913, Dick Martin made an application to the United Daughters of the Confederacy for the "Southern Cross of Honor." Certificate, owned by the author, bought at a Civil War Show. He is shown as a member of Camp No. 91, United Confederate Veterans. The application is also signed by Hugh Hamilton, F.R. Duke, and approved by A.F. Rose, Adjutant.

United Daughters of the Confederacy; Black Horse Chapter, Warrenton, Virginia; from a newspaper clipping in the Chapter scrapbook, source unknown. Provided to the author by Mrs. J. Willard Lineweaver, Warrenton, VA.

### *Published Primary Sources*

Buck, D. A., *Fauquier County, Virginia Birth Registry 1853-1896*, 1996; 10814 Paynes Church Drive, Fairfax, VA 22032, 703-591-2593, copy in Fauquier County Library.

Hunter, Alexander; *The Women of the Debatable Land*, Corden Publishing Company, Washington, D.C., 1912.

Hunter, Alexander; *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*; pg. 666-669; The Neal Publishing Company; New York and Washington; 1905. Almost one half of this book is devoted to Hunter's experiences while a member of the Black Horse Cavalry. He discussed the Martin brothers in detail.

*Bibliography*

Murry, Maj. J. Ogden Murry, *The Immortal Six Hundred: A Story Of Cruelty To Confederate Prisoners Of War*, The Eddy Press Corp., Winchester, Va., 1905, p.237

Scott, Col. John, "The Black Horse Cavalry," *Annals of the War*, The Times Publishing Company, Philadelphia,

Welton, J. Michael; Editor; "My Heart Is So Rebellious," *The Caldwell Letters, 1861-1865*. 1991.

Hunter, Alexander; *The Women of the Debatable Land*, Corden Publishing Company, Washington, D.C., 1912.

Murry, Maj. J. Ogden Murry, *The Immortal Six Hundred: A Story Of Cruelty To Confederate Prisoners Of War*, The Eddy Press Corp., Winchester, Va., 1905, p.237

Scott, Col. John, "The Black Horse Cavalry," *Annals of the War*, The Times Publishing Company, Philadelphia,

*Periodicals*

*Confederate Veteran* 22:128 This reference discusses the Martin family, and the Meigs incident involving Richard Martin.

Hackley, W.B. and Holtzclaw, B. C. "Germantown Revived", *The Germanna Record*, No. 2. The Memorial foundation of the Germanna Colonies In Virginia, Inc., PO Box 693, Culpeper, Va. 22701

Hopewell, Lynn, "The Bravest Man In Lee's Army," *Fauquier Magazine*, volume 1, number 8 (June 1988): for the complete story of this rifle.

Hopewell, Lynn, "Cavaliers and Lawyers Formed The Famous Black Horse Cavalry", *Fauquier Magazine*, Winter 1992-93, Volume 5, Number 12, p. 25.

*Bibliography*

True Index, 5 January 1876, Margaret A. Martin married Lt. Jas. H. Childs.

Fauquier County Library microfilms.

*The Fauquier Democrat*, May 6, 1933, p. 1. Her tombstone gives her birth as 1841 making her 92.

John T. Toler, *News and Notes*, Fauquier Historical Society, Vol. 15, No. 1, Spring-Summer, 1993, p. 1.

*Secondary Sources*

Gulick, Diane, Fauquier County Parks and Recreation flyer on C. M. Crockett Park, Sponsored by The Memorial Foundation of the Germanna Colonies In Virginia, Inc.,

Newspaper clipping, source unknown, copy given to the author by John K. Gott of Arlington, Virginia. This clipping is an obituary announcement of the death of John Richard Martin. In it he is referred to as the son of "Honest" John Martin. [Look up in Fauquier Democrat.]

Fauquier Deeds; B. 67, Pg. 403. [Need dates.]

Fauquier Wills; B. 35, Pg.403. Date of will probate. His will is dated November 4, 1875.

Fauquier County Virginia marriage records.

*History of Pike County, Missouri; Biographical Sketches*; p. 844.

*Klitch, Helen Jeffries; Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919, Phil Bate Associates, San Antonio, TX.*

Martin, William A., *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia*, Heritage Books, Inc. 1540 Point Ridge Place, Bowie, Md. 2071, (301) 390-7790.

Check with Juanita Burge Gaskill, 1310 Linden Drive, #222, Jefferson City, Missouri, 314-635-3285. Mrs. Gaskill has genealogy of Burge family and further references.

Chriswell, Sara; "U.D.C. Remembers: A Collection of Historic Memorabilia Concerning the War Between the States"; Related by the members of the Black Horse Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy; Warrenton, Virginia. Undated.

*The Years of Anguish, Fauquier County, Virginia, 1861-1865*; Fauquier County Civil War Centennial Committee, 1965.

*Fauquier County, Virginia 1759-1959*; Fauquier County Bicentennial Committee, Warrenton, Virginia, 1959.

Gore, Marvin D., *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County, Virginia (The W.P.A. Records)*, Virginia Book Company, Berryville, VA, 1978.

Glassco, Lawrence A.; *The Glas(s)cock-Glassco Saga*; privately printed; Edward Brothers, Ann Arbor Mi., 1974; p. 84 [**Check** p. no. #]. In Fauquier Co. Library.

Eliza George in Woods, *History of Albermarle County, Virginia*. # Improve cite. See footnote 61.

*Bibliography*

*History of Pike County, Mo. Biographical Sketches*; p. 844. [Improve cite. #]

Klitch, Helen Jeffries , *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, Phil Bate Associates, San Antonio, TX, 1989.

Payne, Col. Brooke, *The Paynes of Virginia*, p. 193, The William Byrd Press, Inc., Richmond, Va., 1937.

Rixey, Randolph Picton, *The Rixey Genealogy*, Printed by J.P. Bell company, Lynchburg, Virginia, 1933.

Scheel, Eugene M., *The Civil War in Fauquier County Virginia*, The Fauquier National Bank, June, 1985.

Tyler, Lyon Gardiner; Editor; *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*; Three Volumes; Lewis Historical Publishing Company; New York; 1915.

United Daughters of the Confederacy, Black Horse Chapter, *The Black Horse Chapter Memoirs*, Warrenton, Fauquier County, Virginia, 1972.

*Register of Former Cadets*, VMI, Memorial Edition, Virginia Military Institute, Lexington, Virginia 1957.

*The VMI New Market Cadets*, The Michie Co., Charlottesville, Va., 1933.

Lynn Hopewell, "Cavaliers and Lawyers Formed The Famous Black Horse Cavalry," *Fauquier Magazine*, volume 5, number 12 (Winter 1992-93): 25-27.

*Bibliography*

Katherine Isham Keith, "The Record of the Black Horse Troop," *Fauquier Historical Society Bulletin*, volume I, number 1 (June 1923). The author was the daughter of Black Horseman Isham Keith.

Colonel John Scott, "The Black Horse Cavalry," *The Annals of the War*, (Philadelphia: The Times Publishing Company, 1879), 590-613. Col. Scott was the first captain of the Black Horse. This is the only history of the Black Horse written by a member of the company.

Lynn Hopewell, "The Bravest Man In Lee's Army," *Fauquier Magazine*, volume 1, number 8 (June 1988): 16-22.

Scott, "The Black Horse Cavalry," 590. Scott states that the date was the anniversary of the Battle of Waterloo.

Fauquier County Civil War Centennial Committee, *The Years of Anguish, Fauquier County, Virginia, 1861-1865*, (Warrenton, privately printed, 1965), appendix iv.

Lynn Hopewell, *The Bravest of the Brave: a History of the Black Horse Cavalry*, in progress.

John W. Wayland, "Germanna: Outpost of Adventure 1714-1956," *The Germanna Record* 7 (1956): 17.

Arthur L. Keith, "The German Colony of 1717," *William and Mary College Quarterly*, First Series, Volume 26, 79-95, 178-195, 234-249.

Rush W. Boyer, "The Pioneer village of Germantown: A Tour of Fauquier Counties' First White Settlement," *Fauquier Democrat*, June 9, 1955, p E-1.

*Bibliography*

H. C. Groome, *Fauquier During the Proprietorship*, (Richmond, Virginia: Old Dominion Press, 1927), Chapter IV: "Germantown", 113-130.

Benjamin C. Holtzclaw, "Germantown Revived," *The Germanna Record*, 2 (April, 1962): 11-76. This is the most extensive treatment of the settlement and land transactions of Germantown.

Diane Gulick, *C. M. Crockett Park*, Fauquier County Parks and Recreation, Sponsored by The Memorial Foundation of the Germanna Colonies In Virginia, Inc. This is a small flyer for distribution to the public.

William A. Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia*, (Bowie, Maryland: Heritage Books, Inc., 1995), 23-24.

Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia*, 18-19. This is the most recent research on the Martin family.

Benjamin C. Holtzclaw, "John Joseph Martin of Germanna and Germantown," *The Germanna Record* 1 (July, 1961): 43.

Woodford B. Hackley, "The Plat of Germantown," *The Germanna Record* 2 (April, 1962): 77-81. Germantown location plotted using Hackley map on page .

John Richard Martin obituary, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper, in collection of John K. Gott, Marshall, Virginia. This clipping is an announcement of the death of John Richard Martin. In it he is referred to as the son of "Honest" John Martin.

John Martin household, 1870 U.S. census, Fauquier County, Virginia, National Arhives micropublication roll 1145, page 492. He states his age as 73.

John Martin death notice, *Alexandria Gazette*, Alexandria Virginia, Monday July 31, 1876. Clipping in the possession of John Gott. "John Martin died at his farm in lower Fauquier on the 25<sup>th</sup> inst."

John Martin will (1875), Fauquier County Will Book 35: 403. Clerk of the Court's Office, Warrenton, Virginia. **Date of will probate?** . His will is dated November 4, 1875.

#### Fauquier County Marriage

John S. Moore, *A History of Broad Run Baptist Church, S.B.C., 1762-1987* (no place: privately printed, 1987), 53. It is one of the two oldest Baptist churches in Virginia. See this reference for a history of the church and its ministers, several of whom were involved in the marriages of subjects in this book; Cumberland George **H. H. Hyer** and John Ogilvie all have extensive biographies in the reference. John Ogilvie was ordained in 1824 and became a paster of Upper Goose Creek (now Pleasant Vale) Church in Fauquier County. He cared for four churches each of which he would visit once a month. He later was pastor of Broad Run Baptist church from 1841 to 1849. (**get photo.**)

Helen Jeffries Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919* (San Antonio, Texas: Phil Bate Associates, 1989), "Brief History and Complete Minutes of the Broad Run Baptist Church, 1762-1872", part nine, 284.

Alexander Hunter, *Johnny Reb and Billy Yank*, (The Neal Publishing Company; New York and Washington, 1905), 666-669. Almost one half of this book is devoted

to Hunter's experiences while a member of the Black Horse Cavalry. He discussed the Martin brothers in detail.

The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County Virginia* (Berryville, Virginia: Virginia Book Company, 1978), 753-754. Sidney Shumate, Warrenton provided the information. Research by M.D. Gore, Sumerduck, Virginia, February 15, 1937. "The material included in this volume was compiled during the mid-1930's, during the Great Depression by local, historically-minded workers employed by the Writers' Program of the Works Projects Administration.

Rev. Horace Edwin Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies, A Genealogy of the Lewis Family, ??? check series and improve citation.? (Wilkes-Barre, Pennsylvania, no publisher, 1891.. Reissued Genealogical Publishing company: Baltimore, 1973. p 158. An excellent source for the Lewis and Phillips family.*

Nancy Chappellear Baird, *Fauquier County Tombstone Inscriptions, (1970)* (Warrenton, Virginia: privately printed, 1970), 93. There is another edition of this book published at a later date.

To avoid<sup>1</sup> Kimmarie Lewis, "Collector Holds History's Beauty," *Fauquier Magazine*, November 1991: 18. Donald R. Thorpe now owns "Marsh Run".

George M. Ficklin entry, *Fauquier County Deaths 1854-1896*: 30. He was unmarried. His father gave information. His parents were William P. and A[nn]. M[artin]. Ficklin. He died at his father's home.

R.A. Hart newspaper article, undated clipping from unidentified newspaper, in scrapbook of the Black Horse Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, Warrenton, Virginia.

*Virginia Genealogies, A Genealogy of the Lewis family, ??? check series and improve citation.? (Wilkes-Barre, Pennsylvania,; no publisher, 1891. Reissued Genealogical Publishing company: Baltimore, 1973. p 158* The only source with her first name. The list of the children's' names came from this source.

Telephone interview with William M. Ficklin; 182 Apple Road, Boones Mille, VA 24065; 540-334-2331, by Lynn Hopewell, July 5, 1999. Transcript held by Hopewell (82 Erin Drive, Warrenton, VA 20186). Mr. Ficklin is the son of George Ficklin, son of William L. Ficklin and his wife Lucy S. Eastham. Mr. Ficklin gave most of the information on his grandfather's family.

Interview, William M. Ficklin, July 5, 1999. The next children named by Mr. Ficklin. They are not in Hayden.

[ \_\_\_\_\_, need article, etc.] *Confederate Veteran*, 22:128; This reference discusses the Martin

Interview, Alice Jane (Buchanan) Childs, (Mrs. Ernest Lee Childs, Jr., 5272 Casanova Road; Casanova, VA 22017), by Lynn Hopewell, July 11, 1999. Her husband, Earnest Lee Childs, Jr. is Honest John Martin's great-grandson.

Annie R. Martin entry, Fauquier County Births: 96, line 40. Born near 3 Mile Station, parents Robert E. and Mary B. Martin. He was a farmer, reported by John Martin (her grandfather). Surely the B. in Mary's name should be a V.

Klitch, *Joseph Arthur Jeffries' Fauquier County, 1840-1919*, 216. The obituary confirms the day of death, but makes no mention of the month or year.

J. Ogden Murry, Maj., *The Immortal Six Hundred: A Story Of Cruelty To Confederate Prisoners Of War*, (Winchester, Virginia, The Eddy Press Corp., 1905), 237

Fleming and Baird; *Supplement and Index to Fauquier County, Virginia Tombstone Inscriptions*, A1. [check this reference.]

Fourth Va Cav book.

Interview with Russell C. Bowen, (P.O. Box 155, Remington, Va. 22734), by Lynn Hopewell, June 4, 1988. Mr. Bowen is deceased. He is the grandson of Henry Clay Bowen and conducted extensive research on the Bowen family. Certificate shown to author. He is the brother of Charles H. Bowen, Jr.

Interview, Charles H. Bowen, Jr., June 4, 1988. Mr. Bowen is deceased. Note left with baby on doorstep, "October 11, 1879. Mrs. Bowen, This child is given to you as yours by his Mother," note shown to author.

Baird; *Fauquier County Tombstone Inscriptions*, (1970), 162.

John Richard Martin obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Saturday, January 22, 1916.

The Black Horse Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, *The Black Horse Troop of Fauquier County*, (Warrenton, Virginia: privately printed, 1972), 14.

George W. Martin obituary, [undated clipping [find this!!] from unidentified newspaper, in scrapbook of the Black Horse Chapter, United Daughters of the

Confederacy, Warrenton, Virginia. Copy provided to the author by Mrs. J. Willard Lineweaver, Warrenton, Virginia.

Mildred L. Martin obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, December 13, 1919, page 7. The reference to the niece is to her brother Dick's daughter.

Interview, Charles H. Bowen, Jr., June 4, 1988. Almost all the Bowen family information in this chapter came from this interview.

Eliza George [find ref.] in Woods, *History of Albemarle County, Virginia* [ordered via inter-library loan 29 June 1999, 7/21/1999, searched, no reference to Eliza or any other George.???

Baird, *Fauquier County Tombstone Inscriptions (1970)*, 81. "Consort of William A. Bowen, who departed this life February 27, 1836, in the 31st year of her age." Buried in the Bowen Cemetery, Calverton, Virginia. Located 3 miles S.E. of Calverton , Route 616, N.E. 330 yards, by private road, 120 yards to cemetery.

IGI 1761049. Born 1808, Culpeper county, VA.

UDC application. Black Horse Chapter. **Check** with Krick.

*The VMI New Market Cadets*, The Michie Co., Charlottesville, Va., 1933.

[Describe Battle.]

Interview, Russell C. Bowen, June 4, 1988.

*Register of Former Cadets*, VMI, Memorial Edition, (Lexington, Virginia: Virginia Military Institute, 1957), \_\_\_.

See Culpeper Co. Homes (need exact reference #) for description of Fishback home place.

Interview, Russell C. Bowen, June 4, 1988.

Fourth VA Cav book.

The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County Virginia*, 722-723. Research by M.D. Gore, Summerduck, Virginia, February 24, 1938.

Letter from Mrs. Lewis Rosser, (Box 445, West Linn, Oregon 97068) to Lynn Hopewell, January 21, 1985; held by Lynn Hopewell (82 Erin Drive, Warrenton, VA 29186-2829). Most of the material on the Childs family was provided to the author by this letter. The author's inserted information is in brackets.

William H. Childs tombstone, Childs Family Cemetery, Casanova, Fauquier County, Virginia, transcribed by Lynn Hopewell. There is no record of his death in Fauquier County death records.

George Thomas Strother obituary, *The Fauquier Democrat*, Warrenton, Virginia, Wednesday, March 29, 1933, page 1.

Per John Gott, told to the author.

*History of Pike County, Missouri, Biographical Sketches*,. 844. [?add fuller citation detail re publisher?]

Dee Ann Buck, *Fauquier County, Virginia Birth Registry 1853-1896* (Fairfax, Virginia; privately printed, 1996.), 31.

Edward D. C. Campbell, Jr., ““Strangers and Pilgrims”, The Diary of Margaret Tilloston Kemble Norse 4 April-11 November 1862,” *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* volume 91, number 4 (October, 1983): 466-7.

Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies, A Genealogy of the Lewis family, ??? check series and improve citation.? (Wilkes-Barre, Pennsylvania; no publisher, 1891. Reissued Genealogical Publishing company: Baltimore, 1973. p 158.* An excellent source for the Lewis and Phillips family. Almost all the information in this chapter came from this source.

**Need IGA reference from LDS library.** Visit/call LDS Family library in Annandale for Susan Fisher, Individual Record, International Genealogical Index Film No. 445772, Reference No. 48335, Temple Salt Lake. Says she was b. about 1808 and her father was Thomas Fisher. Film No 445990, Page 806, says Thomas H. Fisher's father (but Thomas H. Fisher not mentioned in his father's will.) was Thomas Fisher and his mother Martha Ann Ball. Film 445992, Ord. No. 89181, Temple S.L. says Margaret Fisher born about 1826 dau.of Thomas Fisher and Martha Ann Ball.

Moore, *A History of Broad Run Baptist Church, S.B.C., 1762-1987*, 65.  
Cumberland George was pastor of Broad Run Baptist church 1826-1841.

**Ripley, "The Shumate Family", ix.** This reference is an encyclopedic genealogy of the Shumate family with extensive analysis of its origins in France before the immigration as well as the American descendants. This is a “must have” book for anyone interested in the Shumate Family.

*Bibliography*

The Works Projects Administration, *Old Homes and Families of Fauquier County*, 481-481. Research by M. D. Gore, Summerduck, Virginia, May 13, 1937. Cameron Crowne, Midland, Virginia, owner of the southeastern part of the farm provided the information.

Periodical Source Index (PERSI), published by the Allen County Public Library in Fort Wayne, Indiana.

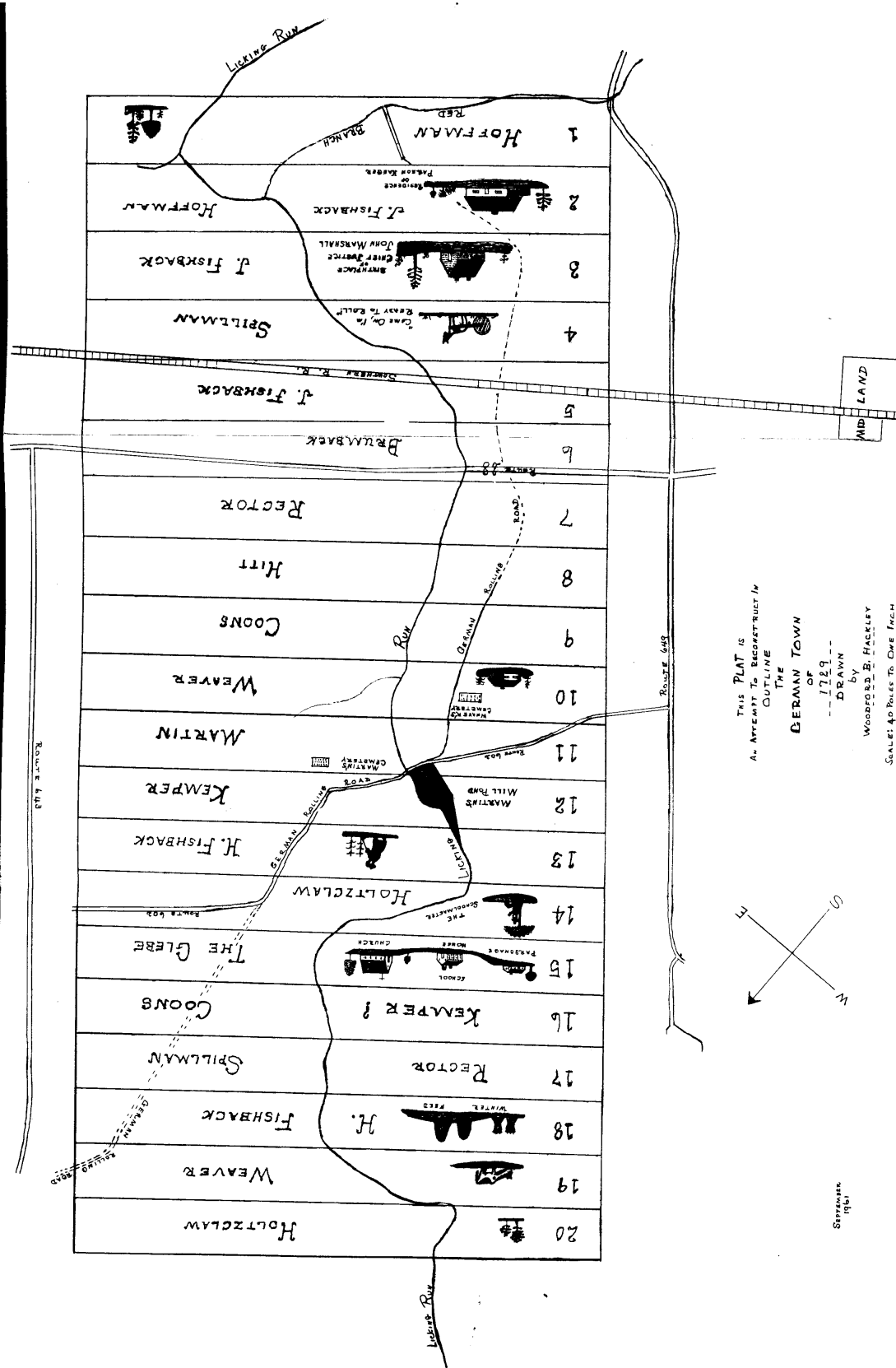
## Martin Deeds Analysis

Date of Deed	Date of Record	Grantor	Grantee	Description
23 Nov. 1875, Book 68: 28	record 9 August, 1876)	John Martin	George W. Martin as trustee for Susan E. Bowen	Portion of Licking Run Farm
20 Dec. 1975 Book 67: 403		John Martin	John R. Martin	Part of Licking Run Farm, 100 acres
20 Dec. 1875 Book 67: 404		John Martin	Mildred L. Martin	Part of Home Farm. Also undivided portion of the Licking Run Farm adjoining Dodd Johnson and Childs. Containing about 50 acres.
20 December 1875,		John Martin	Mary V. Martin, his daughter-in-	Portion of Home Farm, adjoining the lands of Beale Holtzclaw and

Martin Deeds Analysis

Book 67, p. 405			law	others; containing 85 acres. Also on half of an undivided part of the Licking Run Farm, containing about 50 acres.
12 November 1877, book 69, p. 70		John R. Martin and wife Jimimia Martin of Callaway Co. MO	Edward M. Groves	Licken Run property received from his "late" father. Reserved graveyard.

Martin Deeds Analysis



# Martin Wills Analysis

To be done.



## Honest John Martin Family's Vital Statistics

Here is a table comparing ages of family members from several sources.

Person	Age in 1850 Primary Source	Based on Bible	Based on 1850 Census	Based on 1860 Census	Best Source
John Martin		Birthday: 8 October 1796 Would be 54.	Census says 49, an error. 1860 census corresponds to ancestral file.	1896/1 897 based on age 73 in 1870 census	8 October 1796
Susan Martin	Tombstone: born 10 March, 1803	b. 1810: would be 40.	Census says 48. Based on tombstone would be 47		b. 10 March, 1803
William		b. 8 Feb. 1830: would be 20	Census says 20		b. 8 Feb. 1830

Martin Family Vital Statistics

Robert		b. 15 Aug. 1831: would be 19	Census says 18		15 Aug. 1831
Margaret	Tombstone: b. Sept. 4, 1836	b 4 Sept. 1836. <i>Exact correspondence.</i> Age would be 14	Census says 14		Tombston e: b. 4 Sept., 1836
Mildred		b. 1838. Age would be 11/12	Census says 11		b. 1838
John	Death certificate: 9 July, 1841	b. 9 July 1841. <i>Exact correspondence.</i> Age would be 9	Census says 9		b. 9 July 1841
Susan	Tombstone: b. 1841	b. 9 July 1841. <i>Correspondence to tombstone</i> Age would be 9	Census says 9		b. 9 July 1841
George	Tombstone: b. 1 Feb. 1844	b. 1 Feb. 1844. <i>Exact correspondence.</i> Age would be 6	Census says 7.		1 Feb. 1844

## Elias Beverly Martin

Martin genealogist William Martin makes a case that Elias Beverly Martin is a possible son of Elias Martin and Mary Mountjoy.<sup>452</sup> The doubt comes because Elias Beverly is not mentioned in his father's will.

Elias Beverly Martin married Jane G. (or E.) Scott 5 June 1821.<sup>453</sup> Jane Martin is shown as the deceased wife of Elias B. Martin in her father's will in 1826.<sup>454</sup> Elias Beverly Martin married Elizabeth J. Kennard on 29 April 1828.<sup>455</sup> <sup>456</sup> This is probably the same Elias B. Martin in both marriages. No information was found for

---

<sup>452</sup> Martin, *A Martin Genealogy, Tied to the History of Germanna, Virginia*, 126-127.

<sup>453</sup> [Get Fauq. Marriage](#).

<sup>454</sup> Cuthbert B. Scott will (1825/26), Fauquier County Will Book 10: 236, County Clerk's Office, Warrenton, Virginia.

<sup>455</sup> [Get Fauq. Marriage](#).

<sup>456</sup> J. Montgomery Seaver, *The Martin Genealogy*, 41. "This is a record of the Martin family to immigrated to Connecticut." [Investigate book more.], online <[www. Genealogylibrary.com](http://www.Genealogylibrary.com)>, printout dated July, 1999. Previously published in hard copy (Philadelphia: American Historical Society, 1929). This source identifies him as Elias Beverly Martin who married Elizabeth J. Kennard. It does not identify his parents. It names all his children as well as the information for James Franklin Martin, the only child for which family information was given.

children of his first marriage. Jane's death date is unknown, but it is certainly possible they had no children. Children by his marriage to Kennard were:<sup>457</sup>

1. James Franklin Martin, born 6 September 1831 in Fauquier County. He died 11 February 1888. He married Fannie Ellen Mitchell about 1853 in Virginia. She was born about 1833 in Virginia. They had Susie and P.B.<sup>458</sup> I could not find information on his marriage or death place.]

**Check Fauquier marriages and deaths.**

2. Baynton Martin, born 1833 in Fauquier County.
3. Elizabeth Martin, born 1835 in Fauquier County.
4. Lucket Martin, born 1837 in Fauquier County.

---

<sup>457</sup> Mark Wayne Martin, compiler, "Elias Beverly Martin-Elizabeth J. Kenneard family group sheet" (undocumented); ancestral file numbers 10GX-QJF and 10GX-QKM, *Ancestral File*, version 4.19 (1999), Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City, Utah. This source also identifies his middle name as Beverly. It does not show a marriage to Scott.

<sup>458</sup> Seaver, *The Martin Genealogy*, online, 41. This source identifies his wife and children. It also confirms Baynton and Elizabeth as his siblings, but does not mention Lucket or Beverly. It does not show a marriage to Scott.

5. Beverly Martin, born 1839 in Fauquier County. [contact Mark Wayne Martin. See LDS site Ancestral file.]

## Research Notes

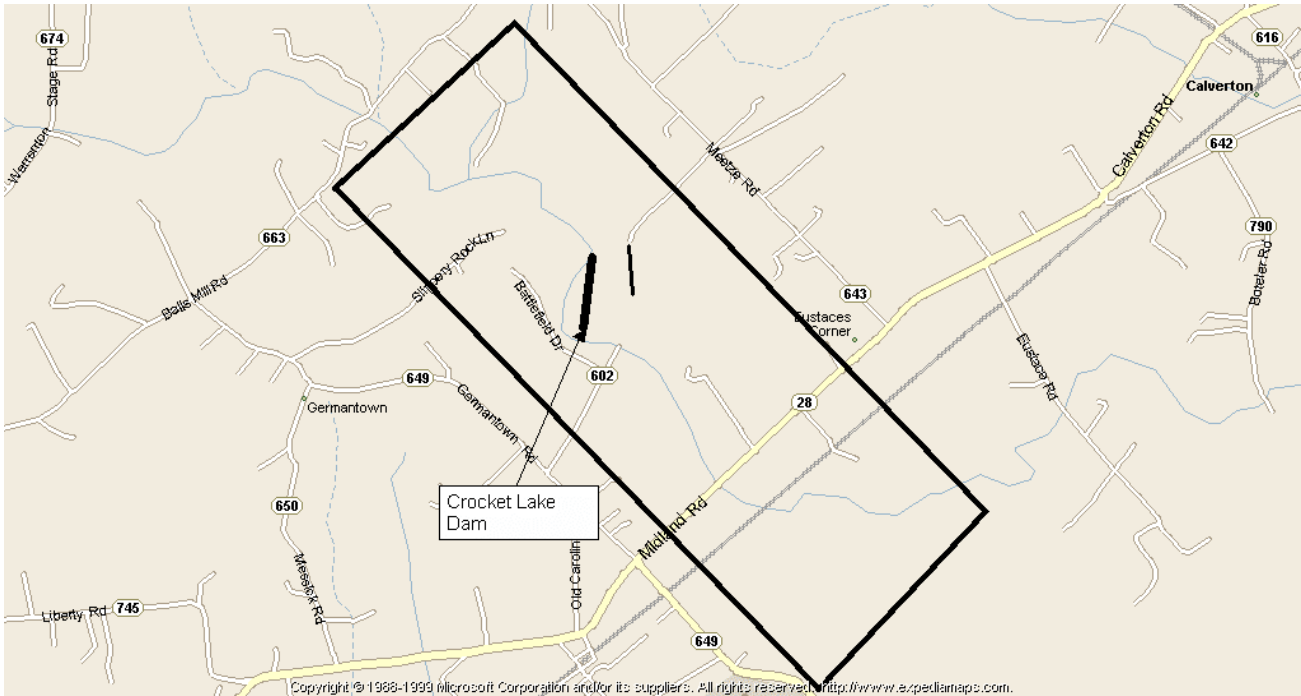
1. Piedmont Press & Graphics, Tony Tedeschi, Les Nichols. 347-4466
2. Beth Miller, E.M. Press 439-0304.
3. Develop history of the term "bravest of the brave."
4. Use TMG to make descendants chart for Martins.
5. On trip to cemetery with Scotty Carter, found stone marked, M.F.M., April 1868, died November 20, 1882. Who is this?
6. Check death record of Bettie Martin Bowen, died 1933. Write to state.
7. Most of the material on the Childs family was provided to the author by **Mrs. Lewis Rosser**, Box 445, West Linn, Oregon 97068; by letter, January 21, 1985. DEAD NUMBER
8. Research Broad Run Baptist Church minutes in Jeffries for more Lewis and Mildred Shumate and for Martins.
9. Research tithables of Fauquier co.
10. Newspaper clipping, source unknown, copy given to the author by John K. Gott of Arlington, Virginia. This clipping is an obituary announcement of the death of John Richard Martin. In it he is referred to as the son of "Honest" John Martin. [Look up in Fauquier Democrat.]



[

1900





Information Needed to Finish John Richard “Dick” Martin Chapter

Send to :

Lynn Hopewell

82 Erin Drive

Warrenton, VA 20186-2829

540-349-2488

[hopewell@erols.com](mailto:hopewell@erols.com)

**1. Jemima Gilmore:**

- a. Birthday\_\_\_\_\_
- b. Father’s full name \_\_\_\_\_
- c. Mother’s full maiden name \_\_\_\_\_
- d. Date and place of father’s birth(census says he born in SC)  
\_\_\_\_\_

- e. Date and place of father's death \_\_\_\_\_
- f. Place of burial \_\_\_\_\_
- g. Date and place of mother's death \_\_\_\_\_
- h. Place of burial \_\_\_\_\_
- i. Date and place of marriage to Charles \_\_\_\_\_

**2. Charles O. Kinney:**

- a. Charles' middle name \_\_\_\_\_
- b. Father's name: Joesph Kenney (Middle name? \_\_\_\_\_)
- c. Mother's maiden name was Ann Graham (middle name? \_\_\_\_\_)
- d. Date of father's birth \_\_\_\_\_ (b. in Buffalo, NY.)
- e. Date and place of father's death \_\_\_\_\_
- f. Place of burial \_\_\_\_\_
- g. Date and place of mother's birth(census says she born in KY) \_\_\_\_\_
- h. Date and place of mother's death \_\_\_\_\_
- i. Place of burial \_\_\_\_\_

**3. Lucy Ann Martin Smith**

- a. Birthday \_\_\_\_\_, 1877.

- b. Birthplace \_\_\_\_\_ (Vandalia?)
- c. Date of death \_\_\_\_\_
- d. Date and place of marriage to Nat: \_\_\_\_\_

**4. Nathaniel DeWitt Smith**

- a. Date of birth \_\_\_\_\_
- b. Place of birth \_\_\_\_\_
- c. Date of death \_\_\_\_\_
- d. Place of death \_\_\_\_\_
- e. Place of burial \_\_\_\_\_
- f. Father's name \_\_\_\_\_
- g. Mother's maiden name \_\_\_\_\_
- h. Date and place of father's birth \_\_\_\_\_
- i. Date and place of father's death  
\_\_\_\_\_
- j. Date and place of mother's birth
- k. Date and place of mother's death \_\_\_\_\_

**5. DeWitt Smith**

- a. Birthplace \_\_\_\_\_